



REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01777 1491

6  
GENEALOGY  
974.402  
SO49SHS  
1904-1906







# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOLUME III.

---

April, 1904

TO

January, 1905

---

Published by  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Somerville, Mass.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2013

# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1904

Vol. III

No. 1



## CONTENTS

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE OLD MIDDLESEX CANAL (concluded)	Herbord F. Jones	color
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS IN THE 18TH CENTURY (continued)	Frances Marquand	11
ALBERT CLIFFORD TUFTS	Edward G. Burt	20
NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NO. 7	Harriet A. Allen	22

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,  
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. III.

APRIL, 1904.

No. 1.

## HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE OLD MIDDLESEX CANAL.

By Herbert Pierce Yeaton.

[Concluded.]

THE CANAL began at Middlesex Village, on the Merrimac river in the town of Chelmsford, and was lifted through a connected flight of three locks, passing under the main street over an aqueduct across the brook—near which are some quaint old houses erected by the proprietors for the use of their employes—and through the long swamp to River Meadow brook, also crossed by aqueduct. Thence it was continued to Billerica, where it entered the Concord river by a stone guard lock, with a floating tow path, and passed out on the southern side through another stone guard lock. The canal is still used by the Talbot mills at North Billerica for the supply of water for power, and in this connection they have retained one of the lock gates, thus saving for us one of the best preserved and most interesting features of the old canal. On the south bank of the Concord river an extensive cutting through rocks was necessary. The Shawsheen river flows through a deep and narrow valley, and the stone work for the aqueduct constituted perhaps the most imposing structure on the canal. Two end abutments and a central pier, all stone, supported a wooden truck or box about 180 feet long, elevated thirty feet above the river, and of sufficient width and depth. The abutments and pier remain undisturbed to this day, with some decaying fragments of the oaken truck still clinging to the pier. The highway and electric car line pass within a few feet of this monument.



Half a mile further south was Nichols' lock, a portion of which still remains as a part of a cellar wall. Mr. Nichols had charge of this lock for a great many years. He was a successful farmer, and, in addition, kept an excellent inn for the accommodation of travelers on the canal. There were many of these, and Nichols' was a favorite place for dinner or a night's lodging. In Wilmington the canal passed through wide, boggy meadows, where the bed sank some sixty feet; crossed the Maple Meadow brook near the poor farm by another aqueduct, of which the remains are very picturesque; and then made an abrupt bend around the foot of a hill. This bend was called the Oxbow. A mile further south the canal entered the town of Woburn, passing within a short distance of the house of Loammi Baldwin. Just to the north of Woburn station a picturesque view of the canal may be had from the railroad. The canal has here been transformed into a duckpond, the width being preserved, but each end of the pond being formed by a dam and the railroad embankment. The canal crossed the swamp, where great quantities of earth were sunk in forming the bed and side banks, and passed to the rear of the present public library building and under the road near Wilson's Tavern. This tavern has since been the home-stead of the late Ruel Carter, and was destroyed by fire about 1886. The canal passed through Horn pond, where there was a very important engineering feature, and known as Horn pond, or Stoddard locks. At this point there was a descent of fifty feet by three sets of double stone locks, the middle set being separated from that above and below by a basin-line expansion or widening of the canal, by which the draft of water by locking was equalized. Two of these locks were of hammered granite. These locks were so near Boston, the journey thither in the packet boat, "General Sullivan," was such a pleasant one, the view of the canal and lake was so picturesque and interesting, that the place speedily became a popular resort. Pleasure boats plied the lake, Kendall's Boston brass band and the Brigade band of Boston rendered sweet harmony, and the crowds wandered from the groves to the lake and back to the canal, where shots of lumber-rafts and canal-boats laden with cargoes were



continually passing through the locks. So popular did the place become that in 1838 the Horn Pond House was leased for \$700 for that year.

After passing out of the Horn Pond locks, the canal continued on down to the Horn Pond brook, crossing it at grade by means of waste weirs, which remain to this day in a fair state of preservation. In Winchester the canal passed through Gardner locks, located at the West side of the village, and on through to Mystic pond, crossing the narrow upper arm of the pond over a stone aqueduct. The bed of the canal is plainly visible here, and it is hoped the bed will remain untouched while the March of Progress is still moving on, converting the shores of Mystic pond into a beautiful boulevard. For something over a mile the canal lay within the grounds of the Brooks estate in West Medford. Here stands a beautiful monument, that of the handsome elliptical stone arch, built by George Rumford Baldwin, son of Loammi Baldwin, to convey a farm road over the canal, and considered by engineers to be one of the most graceful structures of the sort in New England. It is plainly visible as one is journeying along by the Brooks farm in the electric cars.

The line of the old canal is where Boston avenue is now situated, passing through Gibson's lock and the aqueduct over the Mystic river, at a point where the new stone bridge now is, then turning to the east the canal passed under the bridge of the Lowell road,—the wing walls of this bridge are yet plainly visible,—and on past the Royall House, where the canal passed under Main street and sent off a branch to the river, for the benefit of the ship-yards of Medford and Charlestown; and so on through the Mystic trotting park to the base of Winter hill, Somerville. From this point the canal followed the line of the high land around to the short bend in the Mystic river, where Dunning's coal wharf is at present located; then to the south, through nearly the centre of the Broadway park; around the base of Mount Benedict,—now nearly dug away,—across the foot of Austin street, where the gate-house may still be seen; then nearly parallel to Main street, Charlestown, to the Neck, where it passed under Main street, through a lock and into the mill-



pond. Most of the cargoes were loaded here, but for those wishing carriage to Boston there was a lock with double gates working either way, according to the state of the tide, for admission into the Charles river. Once in the river, it was an easy matter to reach any of the city wharves; but there was also an extension of the canal through what is now Haymarket square—Canal street being directly alongside—following nearly the lines of Blackstone street to the harbor, near what is now North Market street. Nearly all of the stone for Quincy market was brought over this route. On the map of 1812, in the Old State House in Boston, the canal can be traced under Cross, Hanover, and Ann—now North street—along Canal street.

It is difficult to ascertain the whole number of boats employed at any one time. Many were owned and run by the proprietors of the canal, and many were constructed and run by private parties who paid the regular tolls for whatever merchandise they carried. The original toll was placed at twopence per ton per mile; it was afterward, by Act of Legislature, placed at one-sixteenth of a dollar per ton per mile for goods carried in the boats, and the same for every ton of timber floated in rafts. The actual rates ranged from one to two dollars per gross ton for the twenty-seven miles from Boston to Lowell. Boats belonging to the same parties were conspicuously numbered and lettered, and private boats, of which there were many, were painted with such designs as to be easily recognized, as in the case of freight cars of to-day. The luggage or merchandise boats, of which there are probably none in existence, were peculiarly constructed to meet the requirements of canal navigation, and the mode of propulsion was as peculiar as their model. They were about seventy-five feet long, nine feet wide in the middle, and a little narrowed at the ends; flat-bottomed across the full width, but the bottom sloped or rounded up from near the mid-length of the boat, both towards the stem and stern, so that while the sides were level on top and about three feet deep at mid-length they were only a foot or less in depth at either end. A load of twenty tons would make the boats draw two feet or more near the middle, while the bottom would be



out of the water at each end. They were built of two-inch pine planks spiked on to small oak cross-joints and side knees, and had heavy oak horizontal timbers at each end. The sides were vertical and without cross thwarts, except what was called the mast board, a thick oak plank securely fastened across on top from side to side a little forward of the centre of the boat. The seams between the planks were calked with oakum and pitched.

The rudder was a long steering oar pivoted on the centre of the cross frame of the stern, so as to afford a good leverage for guiding the unwieldy craft. The blade was about eighteen inches wide and ten feet long, and trailed in the water behind the boat. There were also three large scull oars about sixteen feet long, with six-inch blades. Three setting poles or pike poles, as they are sometimes called (stout, straight, round poles, wrought out of tough and spongy ash about fifteen feet long, nearly two inches in diameter, and shod at one end with a long iron point), completed the propelling outfit.

The crew consisted of a skipper and two bowmen. In going down the Merrimac river the scull oars were used, and when there was a fair wind a sail was hoisted. In going down the river, the bowmen took positions close to either side of the boat facing the bow and about six feet from it, and each worked his oar against a thole-pin placed in the opposite gunwale, the oar handles crossing so that they were necessarily worked simultaneously. The skipper also had his oar, which he worked in a similar way when his attention was not wholly taken up in steering. When the boats arrived at Middlesex Village, they were then towed to Charlestown by horses, frequently without a driver, in which case the man at the rudder kept a small pile of stones or green apples ready for the encouragement of the horse.

In mid-summer, when the river was low, only about half a full load could be carried. Three boats each way a week were run. The fare from Boston to Middlesex was seventy-five cents, and from Middlesex to Lowell six and one-quarter cents. A stage met the boats at Middlesex to carry passengers to Lowell. The pay for a boatman in 1830 was \$15 per month. Luggage or merchandise boats made two and one-half miles per hour, while



passage boats made four miles. The time required to go from Boston to Lowell was about twelve hours, and to Concord, N. H., from seven to ten days. Between Boston and Lowell the usual time for freight boats was eighteen hours up and twelve hours down.

Of the passage boats there were at first two, one running up and one down daily. Later, when the amount of travel proved insufficient to warrant two boats, one was removed, and the "Governor Sullivan" ran alone. This was a boat on the style of the Erie canal-boats, though somewhat lighter, with a covered cabin over the whole length, except for the standing room at each end. The cabin was provided with seats, and was upholstered much as the horse cars of a decade ago. In its day the "Governor Sullivan" was considered a model of comfort and elegance. When the feverish haste born of the locomotives and telegraph had not yet infested society, a trip over the canal in the passenger packet "Governor Sullivan" must have been an enjoyable experience. Protected by iron rules from the danger of collision, undaunted by squalls of wind, realizing, should the craft be capsized, that he had nothing to do but walk ashore, the traveler speeding along the leisurely pace of four miles per hour had ample time for observation and reflection. Seated in summer under a spacious awning, he traversed the valley of the Mystic, skirting the picturesque shores of Mystic pond. Instead of a foreground of blurred landscapes, vanishing ghostlike, ere its features could be fairly distinguished, soft bits of characteristic New England scenery, cut clear as cameos, lingered caressingly on his vision.

A large amount of lumber was being used during this period by the ship-yards on the Mystic river, and nearly all of it being rafted down the canal. By the regulations, these rafts could not be larger than seventy-five feet by nine and one-half feet; but a number of rafts could be banded together by slabs pinned between them. A band of seven to ten rafts required five men, including the driver; four rafts required four men, and three rafts three men. These rafts were unpinned and sent through the locks separately, and then again united. The rafts



were drawn by yoked oxen, a single yoke drawing no less than 100 tons of timber, a load requiring eighty teams on the common road.

According to the rules of the corporation, boats of the same class going in the same direction were not allowed to pass each other. Repair boats had the precedence over everything, then came passage boats, luggage or merchandise boats, and lastly rafts. Landing and loading places were established at the mill-pond in Charlestown, in Medford, Woburn, Wilmington, Billerica, and Chelmsford. No goods were allowed to be unloaded or loaded at any other places without a special permit from the agent, this being a precaution against damage to the banks. Racing was prohibited. Whenever a boat approached a lock, a horn was sounded to attract the lock-tenders' attention. No horns were sounded on Sunday, although traveling was permitted. Navigation ceased at night on account of the danger of damaging the canal; so at every series of locks there was a tavern. Two of the most important taverns of the time were the Horn Pond House in Woburn and the Bunker Hill Tavern in Charlestown.

To the people who lived near the banks the canal was a source of pleasure, and was made serviceable in many ways. Its clear waters like a silver thread through the landscape added to the natural charm and the beauty of the delightful scenery. The wide tow-path was skirted with a generous growth of shrubbery and dotted with wild flowers, which made it the boulevard of the town. Sunday afternoons "fellers with their best girls" promenaded along the tow-path. Many were those who left the heat of the city for country air, just as now-a-days Franklin park affords recreation for many. Picnic parties came and camped on its shores. The Horn Pond House in Woburn was the most important house on the route of the canal. The proprietor was the famous Robert McGill, and had a reputation throughout New England. It was the summer resort of Boston and the surrounding country, and on a summer's day the business done was enormous, people coming by boat and carriages, and as many as 100 vehicles have been counted there in a single Sunday.



In the early spring the water would be drawn off from the canal to allow the men to find breaks in the bank caused by the beaver and muskrat, which were continually making holes, thus letting the water out, frequently doing great damage to the surrounding country. The boys would take advantage of this time and search for articles lost overboard, and it was common to find valuables. When the water was let on every boy and girl would be on hand to watch it and try and keep up with the head of the stream. As an avenue for skating it was unsurpassed, and a spin to Woburn and beyond was of frequent occurrence.

The methods of receiving, transporting, and delivering freight were very similar to those of the present day: a way-bill or pass-port accompanied the goods. Freight charges were paid on removal of the property, and in case of delayed removal, a wharfage or demurrage charge was added.

Meanwhile Caleb Eddy, who assumed the agency of the corporation in 1825, rebuilt the wooden locks and dams of stone. With the accession of business brought by the corporation at Lowell, the prospect for increased dividends in the future was extremely encouraging. The "Golden Age" of the canal appeared close at hand, but the fond hopes of the proprietors were once more destined to disappointment. Even the genius of James Sullivan had not foreseen the locomotive. In 1829 a petition was presented to the legislature for the survey of a road from Boston to Lowell. It was at the house of Patrick T. Jackson, Esq., at 22 Winter street, Boston, where the first step was taken for the organization of a company to build the Boston & Lowell railroad. A committee of the canal was then quickly chosen to draw up for presentation to the General Court a remonstrance of the proprietors of the Middlesex canal against the grant of a charter to build a road from Boston to Lowell. Notwithstanding the pathetic remonstrance of the canal proprietors, the legislature incorporated the road, and refused compensation to the canal. Even while the road was being built, the canal directors did not seem to realize the full gravity of the situation. They continued the policy of replacing wood with stone, and made every effort to perfect the service in all its details, and as late as



1836 the agent recommended improvements. The amount of tonnage continued to increase, and the very ties used in the construction of the railroad were boated, it is said, to points most convenient for the workmen.

The disastrous competition of the road was beginning to be felt. The board of directors waged a plucky warfare with the railroad, reducing tariff on all articles, and almost abolishing it on some, till the expenditures of the canal outran its income; but steam came out triumphant. Even sanguine Caleb Eddy became satisfied that larger competition was vain, and set himself to the difficult task of saving fragments of the inevitable wreck. Business grew rapidly less with the canal after the Nashua & Lowell railroad opened. The country merchants fully appreciated the speed and certainty of the railroad, in spite of the somewhat higher freight rates. Caleb Eddy proposed to abandon the canal for transportation and convert it into a canal for supplying Boston with water. Boston had a population at this time (1843) of about 100,000, and was still dependent on wells for its water supply. Most of the wells were badly contaminated, some being little short of open sewers. Mr. Eddy's plan consisted in abolishing the levels between Billerica and Middlesex Village and Woburn and Charlestown, conducting the water of the canal from Woburn by thirty-inch iron pipes to a reservoir on Mount Benedict in Somerville, thence to be distributed over Boston, and possibly Charlestown and Cambridge. The water from the Concord river was analyzed by Dr. Charles T. Jackson, Professor John W. Webster, of Harvard University, S. L. Dana, of Lowell, and A. A. Hayes, of Roxbury, and by all declared to be pure, soft, and eminently suitable for the purpose. The scheme was, however, not successful, and in 1845 Caleb Eddy resigned his position. Stock fell to \$150, and in 1846 the canal was abandoned and the property was sold for \$130,000, and the amount divided among the stockholders. On April 4, 1852, the last canal-boat was run on the canal by Joel Dix, of Billerica.

By conveyances made in 1832, the company reserved the right to use the land for canalizing purposes; perhaps they



thought the railroad would not be successful, but they soon gave up such thoughts, if they entertained them; and on October 3, 1859, the Supreme Court issued a decree that the proprietors had "forfeited all their franchises and privileges by reason of non-feasance, non-user, misfeasance, and neglect." Thus the corporation was forever extinguished, and went out like a spark.

The canal was not a great financial success, owing to the large sum of money spent in its construction and the continued expense in keeping its bridges, locks, boats, and banks in repair.

To the student interested in noting the actual footprints of progress, old Middlesex Village, adjoining Lowell, and which flourished before the latter was thought of, furnishes subjects for contemplation. In the now quiet hamlet, where trade was once active and manufacturing kept many busy, still stands the office of the collector of the old Middlesex canal. It is a very small structure, and in very good repair, and is surrounded by traces of the enterprise that called it into being. (A few rods away to the north runs the Merrimac river, skirted by the Lowell & Nashua railroad—now a part of the Boston & Maine. The latter stands like a sentry, as it were, forbidding the corpse of the old canal it has slain to rise again; yet, even in death, the old Middlesex canal is remembered by its ancient friend, the Merrimac, whose waters ebb and flow in a narrow culvert connecting the river with the shrub-grown valley which marks the bed of the almost forgotten canal.) The door of this office is unlocked by a huge key, suggestive of other days. The interior is divided into two apartments, one of which was reserved for the collector, and the other for the boatmen and those requiring passports. The little window through which the passports were handed is still there, and not a pane of it disturbed. South of the collector's office stands a tall, Lombardy poplar, another valuable relic, for it calls to mind the banks studded with these odd-looking trees, whose roots once gave stability to the shores of the canal. Several other buildings of interest still stand in historic Middlesex.

The canal is now well defined through the country as one is traveling on the road to Lowell. At Medford the Woburn



sewer runs along one portion of its bed, the Spot pond water pipes another. At Mystic lake the new boulevard has taken possession of the old bed. At points, the old tow-path is now a part of the highway, at another it survives as a cow-path or woodland road. At one point it marks the course of the defunct Mystic Valley railroad. At Wilmington, the stone sides of a lock have become the walls of a dwelling-house cellar, and where once the merry shout of the boatmen was heard bringing the up-country supplies to the city, the rumble and whistle of its successor, the railroad train, thunders past on its hurried journey.

Steam at last drove the canal-boat from the field, and about fifty years ago the canal gave up business and disappeared into the darkness of the past, to be forever forgotten except in name.

---

## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

By Frank Mortimer Hawes.

[Continued.]

**M**R. BARRETT probably did not teach longer than the time specified, as Wyman says that the next incumbent of the office, Joseph Simson, taught from 1721 to 1724.

May 15, 1721. In addition to the master's salary of £60 for the coming year, £3 was voted for firewood for the school. As this is the first time the subject of wood is mentioned in this form, we may infer that previous to this date, as in other towns at that time, the fuel for the school had been contributed by the parents.

February 8, 1722-3. "In running the bounds of the school lot, being No. 68, given to the school by Mr. Daniel Russell, being in second division of Charlestown, viz.: a wood lot of 45½ acres, it was found that this lot and lot 67 fell short 10½ acres, & we offered to settle the bounds with Mr. Joseph Underwood, we to abate 7 acres and he 3½ acres, which he refused. But we settled bounds & drove down stakes accordingly. Thomas Jenner, Town Clerk."



Rev. Daniel Russell, son of Richard, in his will, 26 December, 1678, bequeathed to the town of Charlestown "for the free school, if it is effected in a year's time, 95 acres wood."

May 8, 1723. We may judge something of the school fund at this time from the following: Of the £60 for the school-master, £20 was voted from the town treasury. "The rent of Lovell's Is. £15; rent of ye school lott £5; the interest of £300 & part of ye Lynn farm £20, to make up the remainder."

April 6, 1724. "Mr. Joseph Stimson, gramer school master resigned." This reverend gentleman was the son of Andrew Stimson, Jr., of Cambridge, where he was born February 7, 1700, and graduated from the college in the class of 1720. He became the pastor of the Second church of Malden, and died there March 28, 1752. Through his mother, Abigail Sweetser, he was a cousin to his successor, the next schoolmaster of Charlestown.

The following year, 1725, the custom is revived of paying a man "for looking after the boys on the Lord's Day." Robert Trevett is allowed twenty shillings the first quarter for such service, to begin 8 November, 1726-7, "To Robert Trevett £4 for last year looking after the boys." The same amount is appropriated the year following.

Stray items of expense are interesting: 1724, "Paid for bell to the schoolhouse £2. 10. 0. Richard Miller's bill for work at ye school, &c., &c., £1. 5. 4. John Sprague £4. 5. 0. for a weather cock & mending the school bell." June 15, 1724, Mr. Seth Sweetser was chosen school master. "Mr. John Foye, Mr. Henry Phillips, Thomas Greaves, Esq., Mr. Daniel Russell & Deac. Jonathan Kettle were appointed a committee to apply themselves to ye ministers, as the law directs, for their approbation of Mr. Seth Sweetser, jr., for a grammer school master. His salary is £75 to begin 7 July."

Viewed by the light of later years, this entry has a significance which it would be hard to estimate. For more than a generation we are to follow the history of the Charlestown school, which thus long was under the guidance of this worthy gentleman. The amount appropriated for Mr. Sweetser's salary grew year by year. But the apparent increase, it must be remembered,



was due to a gradual depreciation of the currency, which, in time, came to be estimated in terms of "old tenor" and "new tenor."

May 19, 1746, the amount voted in town meeting for Mr. Sweetser's pay reached the very considerable figure of £250. It was not without frequent petitions, however, that he met with such consideration. These, it would appear, were presented personally, as May 14, 1739, we read: "Mr. Sweetser prays for an increase in his salary, and gets £180." 1746, "Mr. Sweetser prays for more salary, and considering the depreciation of money, £250 is voted." The next three years the amount appropriated fell to £150. Under the stress which probably tried more souls than one, Mr. Sweetser's success seems to have suffered a decline. In 1748 a vote was passed instructing the selectmen to visit his school at least once a quarter. The next year they were authorized to agree with some other instructor, if Mr. Sweetser refused to accept the sum offered him, £150. His resignation went into effect March 6, 1750, after more than a quarter of a century of continual service. A brighter day, however, was in store for him. But matters of importance, in some of which Mr. Sweetser was indirectly concerned, demand that we go back again over these years.

Often these yearly appropriations were in this form: 1724, "£40 were voted for master's salary and £40 more out of the school fund; £5 of it being for fire wood." Very frequently a sum is voted for repairs; as, 1727, £5 on the town house and the schoolhouse. In 1739 £40 is voted for repairs, and 1748 the amount set aside for the purpose is £100 for the schoolhouse alone. Thus the third school building of Charlestown, which, according to our reckoning, ought to have ended its existence about this time, by a timely outlay was made to do duty for several years to come.

Considerable light is thrown upon the school fund at this time. In 1727 it was itemized as follows:—

Lovell's Island, let to William Walters (?), £17.

School lot, let to Timothy Wright, £5.

Salt marsh (on Malden side), let to Joseph Frost, £1. 10.

Money at interest, £357. 10. 0., with income of £21. 9. 0.



A school lot in first division,—amount not given.

Soheegan farm,—not valued.

Land adjoining the schoolhouse,—not valued.

In 1740 the free school income amounted to £71. 4. 0. (Frothingham.) In 1748 these funds amounted to £1,857, Sowhegum farm having been sold for £1,500, and the annual income from this is £180. 10. 0.

From the following entries it will be seen that the selectmen assumed authority over private schools: 1727, "Mr. John Stevens, student at the college, is allowed to keep a Private school in the town for writing & ciphering."

November 17, 1729. "Ordered that Samuel Burr have liberty to improve the middle chamber of the almshouse for to keep a writing school for this winter." 1749, "The selectmen approbated and allowed Mr. Matthew Cushing to keep a private school in this town, to instruct youth in reading, writing, and cyphering, and other sciences, he having been recommended as a person of sober and good conversation." (Frothingham, page 260.)

May 15, 1728, the question came up in town meeting "whether the selectmen shall agree with some person to assist Mr. Sweetser in teaching the school or shall erect another building." The committee chosen to consider the matter were Thomas Greaves, Daniel Russell, Joseph Kent, Joseph Lemmon, and Aaron Cleveland. Later they make an interesting report, in which they suggest that many unfit to attend be kept out of the school. They also think "it might do to have a reading school somewhere at the town charge." Another committee, "to regulate the school accordingly," consisted of Deacon Samuel Frothingham, Deacon Jonathan Kettle, and Joseph Lemmon. That word "somewhere" may have encouraged the petition of several of the inhabitants of the town. In answer thereto, June 17, 1728, "it was voted that the petitioners be allowed out of the Town Treasury towards keeping a school among them their proportion of what they are taxed toward the school or schools in the Town, provided it be employed to that use only for the year ensuing."

This seems to be the first record that can be construed as re-



lating to schools in the outer sections of the town. If, however, the people of the outlying districts accepted these terms and established schools of their own, there is nothing on the books, for a number of years, to show it. It may interest some to read that the selectmen for this year (1728) included Joseph Frost and Joseph Kent,—surnames that are familiar on early Somerville records.

Not until 1736 do we find anything bearing on this subject. In a warrant for a town meeting, April 26 of that year, is the following item: "To see whether the Town will vote to have a school or schools kept in the Town (above the Neck) for teaching and instructing youth in reading, writing, and cyphering." At the meeting held May 6, it was voted to raise £25 for said school, which sum was to be put into the hands of a committee "which are inhabitants without the Neck, to provide a schoolmaster to instruct their children. This committee was empowered to regulate said school as they shall think most convenient for the inhabitants."

Thus was instituted an educational system for the outlying districts which was to continue without material change for more than half a century. These papers, henceforth, will endeavor to emphasize everything on the records relating to this subject, as they give us our first knowledge of the school in that part of the town which afterwards was set off to Medford, to Arlington, or became the town of Somerville. Unfortunately, our information for a time will have to be confined to the annual appropriations and the local committees appointed at the May town meeting. If access could be had to any existing private papers of the Tufts family, of the Rands, Kents, Frosts, Russells, etc., the few men of that period who administered the affairs of our section of Charlestown, no doubt much interesting material might be found. By consulting Wyman's valuable work, and the Brooks-Usher history of Medford, we can determine readily to which section those on the various committees were devoted. Four or five districts must have been represented, which we may designate as the Milk Row, the Alewife Brook, the upper, or Gardner Row, and the one or more at Medford side.



## COMMITTEES APPOINTED FOR THE SCHOOL OUTSIDE THE NECK, TOGETHER WITH THE ANNUAL APPROPRIATIONS.

May 5, 1736, William Symmes, Joseph Frost, William Rand, £25.

May, 1837, William Symmes, Joseph Frost, Joseph Kent, £30.

May 15, 1738, William Rand, Samuel Hutchinson, Henry Gardner, £30.

May 14, 1739, Joseph Kent, Samuel Hutchinson, Henry Gardner, £30.

May 13, 1740, Captain Caleb Brooks, James Peirce, James Tufts, £40.

May 11, 1741, Joseph Kent, Captain Caleb Brooks, James Tufts, £40.

May 10, 1742, and May 10, 1743, the same committee.

May 8, 1744, Captain Caleb Brooks, Joseph Kent, Nathaniel Francis, £50.

May 13, 1745, the same committee.

May 19, 1746, Joseph Kent, Nathaniel Francis, John Bradshaw, £50.

May 11, 1747, Peter Tufts, Philip Cartwrite (Carteret), John Bradshaw, £60.

May 6, 1748, Nathaniel Lamson, Joseph Kent, John Bradshaw, Nathaniel Francis, and Henry Gardner, £80.

May 15, 1749, the same committee, with Mr. Kent, chairman, £100.

May, 1750, Nathaniel Lamson, Nathaniel Francis, Henry Gardner, John Skinner, Samuel Rand, £250, or £33. 6. 8. lawful money.

May 20, 1751, Peter Tufts, Henry Gardner, Benjamin Parker, Seth Reed, Joseph Phipps, £200. O. T.

May 12, 1752, Samuel Bowman, Henry Gardner, Seth Reed, Benjamin Parker, Joseph Phipps, Samuel Kent, £200, or £26. 13. 4. lawful money.

May 14, 1753, Benjamin Parker, Seth Reed, Samuel Kent, Joseph Phipps, £240.

We close the list at this point, as by the next May the town of Medford had taken on a more definite form, and Charlestown,



in consequence, suffered a considerable diminution in territory.

This indefinitely designated locality "beyond the Neck," or "outside the peninsula," consisting, we see, of distinct communities separated by wide stretches of unsettled or sparsely settled territory, to all appearances, after the vote of May, 1736, amicably portioned out the sums we have quoted above. That each district had a school of its own is not certain, but we are inclined to think it did have one. As yet, there is no mention of school-houses, and, although they may have been built by private subscription—little cheap affairs—it is more probable that, for some years, at least, the benefits of education were dispensed in private rooms hired for that purpose. From a study of conditions in some of the neighboring towns, we learn that it was customary, at this period of our history, for the poorer and more sparsely-settled districts to have an itinerant schoolmaster, who devoted himself for a stated period—say a month or six weeks—to one section of the town, and so on until all had been similarly served. The invariable wording of the vote during these first years is for the "school," not "schools," outside the Neck, and for the schoolmaster,—singular, not plural. Now it is very certain this school was not held in some central locality, accessible to all. Neither is it supposable that the young people of Milk Row, for instance, traveled to Medford, or those from Medford to Milk Row. The only way left was for the schoolmaster to circulate about, to time his peregrinations so as to suit the convenience of his constituents. Still another way has been suggested, namely, that, after receiving its just share of the appropriation, each section continued its school for the rest of the year at its own expense.

Concerning the teachers of these outlying districts, the records are provokingly silent. We are indebted to them for one name, however, that of Cotton Tufts, who may have taught on Somerville soil, but it is more probable that his labors were confined to the Medford precinct. This is the record:—

"June 12, 1751, voted to pay Mr. Cotton Tufts, 76£, old tenor, in full, as schoolmaster and employed by Mr. John Skinner, deceased, one of the committee to regulate the school without the neck."



This was, doubtless, the son of Dr. Simon Tufts, the first physician of Medford. Cotton Tufts was born May 3, 1734, and graduated from Harvard College in 1749. Our record shows that he was master of the ferule at the early age of seventeen. Later he married a Miss Smith, sister, it is said, of President John Adams' wife, and resided in Weymouth. He was president of the Massachusetts Medical Association about 1776. His funeral sermon, preached by the Rev. Jacob Norton, is still extant.

Wyman, against the name of Joseph Russell (Walter<sup>3</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, William<sup>1</sup>), born August 27, 1733, says that he kept school about 1721. As the place is not designated, we may not be justified in including him among Charlestown teachers. He may have taught in Menotomy (West Cambridge), where the family lived. But the fact that the historian thus alludes to him would seem to imply that he taught on this side of the line. If not a pedagogue of Charlestown himself, he became the progenitor of a line of teachers through his grandson, Philemon R. Russell, of whom we hope to speak later on.

The little cemetery on Phipps street has preserved from oblivion one other name, that of Mistress Rebeckah Anderson, the only one of the worthy "dames" of that early period whose name has come down to us. The headstone reads:—

Here Lyes Buried  
ye Body of Mrs.  
Rebeckah Anderson  
(Late School-Mistress in  
this Town) who Died  
March 4th, Anno Dom'  
1743-4 in the 49th  
Year of Her Age.

Close by is the grave of her sister, Mrs. Elizabeth Phillips, the famous midwife, who held her commission from the bishop of London. The name of Rebeckah Anderson, who led the van, and that, too, so far in advance of the great army of female teachers, who since her time have battled faithfully for the cause, ought to be treasured by her sisters of to-day. We give this sentiment: As their number never faileth, so may her grave, hereafter, never lack a flower or a sprig of green for memory's sake.



We cannot close this chapter without referring to the name of Isaac Royal, Esq., whose generous benefactions, especially to the outlying schools of Charlestown, entitle him to a place in this history. He was one of the most influential and distinguished citizens of the town, and, as is well known, dwelt in that section which afterwards became Medford. His father, Isaac Royal, Sr., in 1732, purchased of the heirs of Governor Usher an estate of about 500 acres, the consideration being £10,350. The house which is still standing, was enlarged and beautified, and became one of the most pretentious and elegant mansions of the day within the suburbs of Boston. Here the father died, 7 June, 1739, and his widow, "dame Elizabeth," also, 21 April, 1747. Isaac Royall, Jr., born in the West Indies about 1719, thus became the heir of a large and productive estate at the early age of twenty. It is written of him that he delighted to display his riches, and that he had political aspirations, which were partly gratified. But, whatever his motive, he offers an example of generous and interested citizenship which did not find an equal in his day and generation. Personal gleanings from the records give us the following facts:—

In town meeting, May 10, 1743, the thanks of the town were voted to Isaac Royall for his gift of £100, to be used as the town sees fit. The same year he paid out on the highway £45. 13. 0., which sum was offered as a gift to the town, and accepted with thanks.

May 8, 1744, Isaac Royall offered his last year's salary as Representative, with the understanding that the town was to expend it upon the poor.

May 13, 1745, he offered £30 for the poor within the Neck, and £80 for the use of the school without the Neck. Frothingham's History, under date of this year, wrongly states that the gift of £80 was to the school at the Neck. There was no school at the Neck at this time.

May 19, 1746, Mr. Royall offers £30 for the use of the school without the Neck, in addition to what the town raises for that purpose, and £30 for supporting highways between Winter Hill and Mistick bridge. Mr. Royall was one of the selectmen for



1746, and for several years thereafter. May 11, 1747, he returns to the town his pay as Representative the year before. May 16, 1748, of his salary (£120 as Representative), he gives £40 to the poor within the Neck and £80 for the use of the school without the Neck. The next May meeting he gives his year's salary for whatever use the town desires. Again, he donates one-half of his last year's salary to the school without the Neck, and one-half to the school within the Neck. In 1752 Mr. Royal is again elected to the General Court, "but cannot serve the Town as he is made one of the Governor's Councillors," a position which he held for twenty-three years in succession, or until 1774. For his ability he was awarded other high offices, as that of Justice of the Peace and Quorum. He was also a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, and in 1761 became a brigadier-general, "the first of that title among Americans." After 1753, when he became a citizen of Medford, his name, of course, drops from our records. It is not without a feeling of sadness that we contemplate the latter part of his career, which was spent in exile, far from the land he had served long and honorably, and which, so far as we can learn, he ever regarded with affection. He died October, 1781, in England.

---

### ALBERT CLIFFORD TUFTS.

By Edward C. Booth.

ALBERT CLIFFORD TUFTS died March 19, 1904, at his residence, 144 Summer street, Somerville. He had been ill with grippe for three weeks, and was convalescing, when cerebral symptoms supervened, which rapidly brought on a fatal termination. Mr. Tufts was the youngest child of Nathan, Jr., and Mary Jane (Fitz) Tufts, and was born in the house in which he died, September 11, 1864. His paternal grandfather was Nathan Tufts, of Somerville, for whom the Nathan Tufts park, surrounding the old mill and Powder House, was named. His maternal grandfather was Abel Fitz, a prominent merchant of Charlestown, and early resident of Somerville.

Mr. Tufts was educated in the public schools of his native



city. On his graduation from the high school in 1883, he entered the counting room of his father and brother, grain merchants on Warren bridge, Charlestown. He became a partner on the death of his father in 1887, and was active in the business till his last illness.

Mr. Tufts married, April 19, 1893, Mary Belle, the daughter of William Wallace and Anna (Moses) Cotton, of Portsmouth, N. H., who, with a son, Nathan, a boy of six years, survives him. An elder child, Elizabeth, lived to the age of eighteen months.

Though somewhat retiring in general company, Mr. Tufts was fond of the society of his kindred and friends, and was a frequent and generous host. He was keenly alive to the amusements and pleasantries of life, and yet he seemed to preserve the simple and sober ways of a Puritan ancestry. He impressed all who met him in his many walks of life as a sincere, just, and thoroughly trustworthy man. He was the soul of honor. The business ethics inherited from his fathers were not decadent in him. He dealt with all in a straightforward and honorable way, and heartily despised the trickeries and petty meannesses of the world; and yet we fail to recall that he ever spoke ill of any one. As a friend he was helpful, steadfast, and true. He was a constant, unobtrusive, though discriminating, giver to worthy causes. Blessed in his domestic relations, he was singularly happy in his family and home. He was a tender husband and parent, a kind and thoughtful brother, and a loyal kinsman.

His sterling business qualities and the unusual correctness of his life naturally brought him to positions of trust and responsibility. He was a member of the Boston Chamber of Commerce, and served on its important committees and as one of its board of trustees. He was a director in the Bunker Hill National Bank; a member of the New England Historic-Genealogical and the Somerville Historical Societies, and of the Merchants' Club of Boston; a director in the Central Club Association of Somerville; and a member of the Standing Committee and an earnest supporter of the First Congregational (Unitarian) Church of Somerville, with which he had always been affiliated. At these various directing boards he was a regular attendant, a conscientious worker, a wise counsellor, and a safe guardian.



## NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NO. 7. WINTER HILL.

By Harriet A. Adams.

COMMENCING with Joseph Adams, farmer, on the right-hand side, facing down at the top of Winter Hill, was the old Adams house, sometimes called the Magoun house. In 1840, and for many years afterwards, the nearest house was that of Abby and Edmund Tufts, on the lower corner of Broadway and Central street. Mr. Tufts was a printer, and got out the first directory of Somerville.

The next house, that of Chester Adams, was afterward moved to the foot of Winter Hill. Mr. Adams drove down to the bank in Charlestown every morning. There was no regular public conveyance to the city, but a stage ran from Charlestown to Medford, sometimes on Medford Turnpike, and sometimes on Main street (Broadway), which would occasionally pick up a passenger on the highway. The next house was on the lower corner of Main and School streets, owned and occupied by Asa Tufts, a farmer, whose family consisted of a wife and four children.

Later Mr. Ring built a house below this of Mr. Tufts, and there was also a double house, occupied by the families of Luther and Nathaniel Mitchell, brickmakers. At this time there were brickyards on Main street, and the dangerous clay-pits remained long after the business was abandoned. The next house was the Adams house, built for the son of Joseph Adams, of Winter Hill. This house is more than a hundred years old, and to it the Lady Superior and thirty scholars fled for protection on the night of the burning of the Ursuline Convent, August, 1834.

On the same side of the street and next below lived the family of Mr. Griffin. He was a brickmaker, and in the next house was a family by the name of Torrey. From Main street the boats running on the old Middlesex canal could be plainly seen passing to and fro in summer, while in winter the canal was the resort of skaters from quite a distance.

What stagnation in business must have ensued when navigation was suspended on that great highway of commerce! There were no houses in 1840 between Walnut and Cross streets.



J. Adams. ♦

---

Central Street.

---

Tufts. ♦

C. Adams. ♦

---

School Street.

---

Tufts. ♦

J. Adams. ♦  
Griffin. ♦  
Torrey. ♦

---

Walnut Street.

---

Tufts. ♦

---

Cross Street.

---

Cutter. ♦  
Tufts. ♦

Main Street.

Schoolhouse. ♦

---

Franklin Street.

---

Cutter. ♦  
Tufts. ♦

♦ Everett House.

To Medford.

♦ Jaques.

♦ Cutter.

♦ Thorning.

♦  
♦ Stearns.



These crossways were not then called streets, but were styled lanes. Thus Cross street was known as Three Pole Lane. There was a very old house with a sloping roof on the corner of Main street and Three Pole Lane, occupied by a family of Tufts, and afterwards by a Fillebrown family. On the opposite corner lived Mrs. Cutter, the mother of Edward and Fitch Cutter, also a widow by the name of Tufts. There was no other house on that side of Main street until you came to the little district schoolhouse on the corner of what is now Franklin street. There was a "pound" close by, where the school children had famous times with their games. Fitch Cutter, teamster, lived in the next house, and between his house and the schoolhouse there was but a cart track, where now is Franklin street. There were no sidewalks on Main street, and the mud at some seasons was deep indeed. Vehicles would drive close to the grass, and the walking was fearful. A great amount of teaming was done on this road, and the ruts were so deep that, once in them, it was dangerous to try to get out, and many a wrecked wagon strewed the highway.

The next house below Fitch Cutter's was that of Daniel Tufts, occupied afterwards by a family named Cutter. On the left-hand side coming from the top of Winter Hill was the Everett house, where Governor Everett resided for a while; this house is on the corner of Main street and the road to Medford. At the foot of the hill a rangeway led out from Main street to the left, across the Medford Turnpike, to the house of Colonel Jaques, who carried on a stock farm.

Later than the time of which we are writing a house was built halfway down the hill, and occupied by a family named Houghton.

The next house was opposite Three Pole Lane, owned and occupied by Edward Cutter, teamster. In a small house next to him lived Mr. Thorning, with two sons and a daughter. Mrs. Torrey lived there afterwards. There were no more houses before you came to the entrance of the convent grounds; beyond that there was a house occupied by different families. Next to this was the residence of William Stearns and family. This very old house is still standing.





▀ Tomb of Gov. Winthrop family

Groton Church

Copy by G.F. Loring



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1904

Vol. III

No. 2



## CONTENTS.

JOHN WINTHROP	Charles D. Eliot	23
JOHN S. EDGERLY	Helen M. Despeaux	33
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENIN-		
SULA (Continued)	Frank Martimer Hawes	43

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

## Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,  
Somerville, Mass.

**Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.**

**Single copies, 25 cents.**

*\* For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.*

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM. WALTER BOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *Ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. III.

JULY, 1904

No. 2

---

## JOHN WINTHROP

By Charles D. Elliot

The parish of Groton in the county of Suffolk, Eng., lies midway between the town of Sudbury on the river Stower and the town of Hadleigh on the river Bret, Sudbury being about five miles west, and Hadleigh five miles east of Groton, adjoining which to the west is Edwardston, the birthplace of the subject of this paper, Governor John Winthrop. He was born January 12, 1587 (O. S.), and was the son of Adam and Anne Winthrop, of Groton manor, which was the ancestral home of the Winthrops, this estate having descended to this Adam from his grandfather, Adam Winthrop, to whom it had been granted by patent in 1544 by Henry VIII.; the estate previously belonged to the monastery of Bury St. Edmonds.

The following record of Governor Winthrop's birth was made by his father in these words: "John, the only sonne of Adam Winthrop and Anne his wife, was borne in Edwardston on Thursday, about 5 of the clock in the morning the 12 daie of January anno 1587 in the 30 yere of the reigne of Qu. Eliza." Other entries in his diary concerning his son John relate concisely certain important events in the life of the future governor, viz., his entrance to college, his courtship, first marriage and honeymoon. These entries are as follows, viz.:—

"1602. The 2d of December I rode to Cambridge. The VIIIth John my sonne was admitted into Trinitie College."

"1604. The XXIIIId of Aprill my sonne returned from Cambridge."

"1604. The Vth of Novembre my sonne did ryde into Essex wth Willm Forth to Great Stambridge."

"1605. . . . March . . . the XXVIIId day my sonne was solemnly contracted to Mary Foorth by Mr. Culverwell, Minister of Great Stambridge."



"The 16th of Aprill (1605) he was married at Great Stambidge."

"The VIIIth of May (1605) my soonne & his wife came to Groton from London, and the IXth I made a marriage feast," etc.

The above records show that Governor Winthrop was but seventeen years old when married. He immediately came under Mr. Culverwell's ministry, to which, in a confession of his youthful sinfulness made in after life, he ascribes his conversion to Christianity; of which he says, "The ministry of the word came home to my heart with power. . . . I could no longer dally with religion. . . . I had an unsatiable thirst after the word of God; and could not miss a good sermon, especially of such as did search deep into the conscience."

In June, 1615, his wife Mary died, and on December 6, 1615, he married his second wife, Thomasine Clopton, who lived but a year after her marriage. Winthrop speaks of her as a "woman wise, modest, loving & patient of injuries" . . . " & truly religious."

In 1618 he married his third wife, Margaret Tindall. Two letters from him to this lady before their marriage, are models of commingled piety and affection for his future wife, and are very quaint and curious. His third wife died in June, 1647, and in December he married his fourth wife, widow Martha Coitmore, who survived him, and married a third husband, John Coggan.

The letters, still extant, between Governor Winthrop and his wives are conclusive evidence that in the lottery of matrimony he drew charming prizes, as did they.

Winthrop was a justice at eighteen years of age, and lawyer in London as early as 1622, and probably followed some branch of the legal profession up to the time of his appointment as governor—holding court as lord of the manor, and being for some time one of the "Attorneys in the Courte of Wards and Lyvereyes" at the inner temple, etc. He seems to have had clients among the nobility, and to have performed professional service in connection with parliamentary proceedings. One of the bills drawn up by him is entitled "An Act for the preventing of drunkenness and of the great waste of corn," and has the following preamble:



"Forasmuch as it is evident that the excessive strength of beer and ale in Inns & Alehouses is a principal occasion of the waste of the grain of this kingdom and the only fuel of drunkenness & disorder," etc., and enacts that a strength of not over two bushels of malt in a hogshead of beer shall be hereafter used under a penalty of ten pounds for each offense, etc.

The commencement of the Massachusetts Bay Company, whose charter of 1628 Winthrop brought with him, is thus told by Deputy-Governor Thomas Dudley, in a letter to the Countess of Lincoln. He says: "Touching the Plantation which we here have begun, it fell out thus: About the year 1627, some friends being together in Lincolnshire, fell into discourse about New England and the planting of the Gospel there, and after some deliberation, we imparted our reasons, by letters and messages, to some in London and the west country, where it was likewise deliberately thought upon, and at length negotiation so ripened that in the year 1628 we procured a patent from his Majesty for our planting between the Mattachusetts Bay and Charles river on the south, and the river Merrimack on the north." . . .

"Mr. Winthrop, of Suffolk (who was well known in his own country and well approved here for his piety, liberality, wisdom and gravity) coming in to us, we came to such resolution, that in April, 1630, we set sail from Old England." The company to whom this patent from King James of which Dudley speaks was granted was entitled "The Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." Its records have been preserved and published, and are very full in detail, and intensely interesting with reference to the founding of Eastern Massachusetts, and the part taken therein by John Winthrop. The company held its "General Courts" from time to time in London; the one in which we are most interested is concerning the transfer of its government to Massachusetts and appointment of Winthrop as governor. It was on July 28, 1629, and reads: "And lastly, Mr. Governor (Cradock) read certain propositions conceived by himself, viz.: That for the advancement of the Plantation, the inducing and encouraging persons of worth and quality to transplant themselves and families thither, and for other weighty reasons, to



transfer the government of the Plantation to those that shall inhabit there, and not to continue the same in subordination to the company here" (in London). Those present were desired to privately consider this matter, and bring reasons in writing pro and con at the next General Court, and meanwhile to preserve secrecy, "that the same be not divulged," probably fearing that King James' government might defeat their purpose. On August 26, 1629, or within a month after this meeting, an agreement was drawn up between John Winthrop, Thomas Dudley, Richard Salstonstall, William Vassall, Increase Nowell, and others, all now good old New England names, "to embark by the 1st of March next" . . . "to pass the seas (under God's protection), to inhabit and continue in New England; provided, always, that before the last of September next, the whole government, together with the Patent for the said Plantation, be first, by an order of Court, legally transferred and established to remain with us and others which shall inhabit said Plantation," etc. On August 29, 1629, another general court of the company was held, and the matter of transferring the government and charter to New England again discussed, and on the next day the question came up for final decision. The records say that, "after a long debate, Mr. Deputy (Gov'r) put it to the question as followeth: As many of you as desire to have the patent and the government of the Plantation to be transferred to New England," etc., "hold up your hands," etc., "when, by erection of hands, it appeared by the general consent of the company that the government and patent should be settled in New England." At several other meetings the details of this transfer of government were discussed, and on October 20, 1629, the court met to elect the new governor, "and having received extraordinary great commendations of Mr. John Winthrop, both for his integrity, and sufficiency, did put in nomination for that place the said John Winthrop," and he was by a general vote, "by erection of hands, chosen to be Governor for the ensuing year."

Winthrop's voyage to America is described with minuteness day by day in his diary. It begins:—

"Anno Domini, 1630, March 29, Monday (Easter Monday).



Riding at the Cowes, near the Isle of Wight, in the *Arbella*," a ship of 350 tons, "whereof Capt. Peter Milborne was Master, being manned with 52 seamen and 28 pieces of ordnance," etc. At the present day this seems a pretty large armament for such a little canoe of a ship; however, disregarding the proverb of a century or more later, that "Greater ships may venture more, but little boats should keep near shore," they sailed from Old England, and after a long voyage full of incident and peril, from foe and from sea, arrived safely at Salem on June 12, 1630. Speaking of his arrival, Winthrop says: "About 4 in the morning we were near our port. We shot off two pieces of ordnance, and sent our skiff to Mr. Peirce his ship, which lay in the harbor." . . . "Mr. Peirce came aboard us, and returned to fetch Mr. Endecott" . . . "and with him Mr. Skelton and Capt. Levett." . . . "We . . . returned with them to Nahumkeck (Salem), where we supped with good venison pasty and good beer, and at night we returned to our ship." On Thursday, June 17, he writes: "We went to Mattachusetts, to find out a place for our sitting down. We went up Mistick River about six miles." On July 2 he records: "My son Henry Winthrop was drowned at Salem." This was his first great sorrow since arriving.

Under Thursday, July 8, his diary says: "We kept a day of thanksgiving in all the plantations," and under August, but no date, he says, "Monday we kept at Court." This was the first general court held in Massachusetts; it was presided over by Governor Winthrop; it was on August 23, 1630, at Charlestown. Among his first day's state legislation was the order "that Carpenters, joiners, bricklayers, sawyers, and thatchers take no more than 2s. a day, under pain of 10s." fine. Under date of October 23, 1630, speaking of himself in the third person, Winthrop records:—

"The Governor, upon consideration of the inconveniences which had grown in England by drinking one to another, restrained it at his own table, and wished others to do the like, so as it grew, by little and little, to disuse."

Winthrop seems by this to have been the first practical temperance reformer in these parts.



Cotton Mather relates that, "In the year 1632, the governor, with his pastor, Mr. Wilson, and some other gentlemen, to settle a good understanding between the two Colonies, traveled as far as Plymouth, more than forty miles through a howling wilderness"; . . . "the difficulty of the walk was abundantly compensated by the honorable reception" . . . "which they found from the rulers of Plymouth; and by the good correspondence thus established between the colonies, who were like the floating bottles wearing this motto: 'If we come into collision, we break.'"

The harmony established at this time between the two colonies, whose interests in many ways were perhaps not identical, grew some years later into that confederation known as the United Colonies of New England, which was a potent factor in the defense and settlement of the country.

The governor resided first in Charlestown, in the so-called "Great House," where now is City square, in which building, also, was held the general court of the colony. Later, with others he moved to Boston. He settled on the easterly side of what is now Washington street, between Spring lane and Milk street, which place he called "the Green," where he built his house, at the corner of Spring lane, the frame of this house being brought over from Charlestown; it was destroyed by the British in 1775. His front yard is now occupied by the Old South church. This transfer to Boston was probably hastened by lack of good water in Charlestown. Blackstone, the lone settler of Boston, as the record says, "came and acquainted the Governor of an excellent Spring there; withal inviting him and soliciting him thither."

This spring was probably on the south side of Spring lane, not far from Devonshire street, and from which the lane was named.

On September 6, 1631, Winthrop was granted 600 acres of land on the south side of Mystic river, which he named "Ten Hills."

In 1632 he was granted "Conant's Island," in Boston harbor, and changed its name to Governor's Garden, he planting orchards, fruit, and vines there. It is now Governor's Island, the site of Fort Winthrop.



In November, 1632, he received a further grant of fifty acres of land near Wannottymies river, which is now Alewife brook, and in 1634 he was with Craddock granted the fish weir on the Mystic, at Medford, and again another grant of 1,000 acres or more on Concord river.

Winthrop seems to have temporarily resided in Cambridge in 1632. He probably resided at Ten Hills summers, and at Boston winters, maintaining an establishment at Ten Hills the year round.

The original Ten Hills farm, as granted by the general court to Winthrop in 1631, comprised all the land south of Mystic river, from Broadway park to Medford centre, the southerly boundary of the farm being Broadway as far as the Powder House, and then by a line now obliterated to Medford centre,

Ten Hills might with some reason be called a Gubernatorial Demense, being with occasional interruptions owned in families of governors or their associates, from its first grant, to the present time. Its first owner was Governor Winthrop, of Massachusetts; then his son, John Winthrop, Jr., governor of Connecticut; then Charles Lidgett, an associate of Governor Andros; then the wife of Lieutenant-Governor Usher; then Robert Temple, son of the governor of Nova Scotia; then Robert Temple, Jr., grandson of the governor of Nova Scotia, and whose wife was daughter of Governor Shirley; then by Isaac Royal, a governor's councilor; then by Thomas Russell, another governor's councilor; and recently by Governor Oliver Ames; and now by Governor Ames' heirs. Some extracts from Governor Winthrop's diary give us a picture of his life here at Ten Hills and elsewhere at this time. He says, under date of October 11, 1631: "The governor, being at his farmhouse at Mistick, walked out after supper, and took a piece in his hand, supposing he might see a wolf (for they came daily about the house, and killed swine and calves); and being about half a mile off, it grew suddenly dark, so as, in coming home, he mistook his path, and went till he came to a little house of Sagamore John, which stood empty. There he stayed, and having a piece of match in his pocket (for he always carried about him match and a compass,



and in summer time snake weed), he made a good fire near the house, and lay down upon some old mats, which he found there, and so spent the night, sometimes walking by the fire, sometimes singing psalms, and sometimes getting wood, but could not sleep. It was (through God's mercy) a warm night; but a little before day it began to rain, and having no cloak, he made shift by a long pole to climb up into the house." . . . "In the morning he returned safe home, his servants having been much perplexed for him, and having walked about, and shot off pieces, and hallooed in the night, but he heard them not."

"October 30. The Governor, having erected a building of stone at Mistick, there came so violent a storm of rain, for twenty-four hours, from the N. E. and S. E. as (it being not finished, and laid with clay for want of lime) two sides of it were washed down to the ground; and much harm was done to other houses by that storm."

"November 2. The ship Lyon, William Peirce, master, arrived at Natascot. There came in her, the Governour's wife, his eldest son and his wife, and others of his children, and Mr. Eliot, a minister, and other families, being in all about sixty persons, who all arrived in good health, having been ten weeks at sea, and lost none of their company but two children, whereof one was the Governour's daughter Ann, about one year and half old, who died about a week after they came to sea."

"November 4. The Governour, his wife and children went on shore, with Mr. Peirce, in his ship's boat. The ship gave them six or seven pieces. At their landing, the captains, with their companies in arms, entertained them with a guard, and divers volleys of shot, and three drakes; and divers of the assistants and most of the people of the near plantations came to welcome them, and brought and sent for divers days, great store of provisions, as fat hogs, kids, venison, poultry, geese, partridges, etc., so as the like joy and manifestation of love had never been seen in New England. It was a great marvel, that so much people and such store of provisions could be gathered together at so few hours' warning."

"11. We kept a day of thanksgiving at Boston."



The first ship built in Massachusetts was launched from this Ten Hills farm upon the Mystic in 1631, by Governor Winthrop, July 4—an historic day 145 years later, when a new nation was also launched. Winthrop called this boat "the Blessing of the Bay." A few years since, old timbers were found beneath the flats, which are supposed to have been the ways over which this vessel was launched.

This ship was the first war vessel of the colony, doing valiant service against pirates in after years.

Winthrop was succeeded by Thomas Dudley as governor in 1634, but was made deputy-governor in 1636, under Sir Henry Vane, and governor again in 1637, holding until 1640; again re-elected in 1643, and yet again in 1646, retaining the office until his death in 1649.

He ruled with great discretion and firmness, with a clear judgment, and commendable fairness in the settlement of the various troublesome matters which came before him, among which were religious controversies, as well as civil dissensions. One of these was the misunderstanding between him and Deputy-Governor Dudley in many of the affairs of the colony. But these public troubles were not the only ones that Winthrop suffered; added to the death of his son Henry and another child, came that of his wife Margaret, and, to make his burdens more grievous, his confidential agent so managed his estates that financial ruin seemed inevitable.

This man, whose name was Luxford, in his letters to Winthrop, constantly reassured the governor of his faithfulness, and disclaimed the peculations with which rumor charged him, but was finally brought to trial, convicted of fraud, and also bigamy, and was imprisoned and his ears cut off.

The unfaithfulness of Luxford caused Winthrop to revoke certain testaments in his will, in which document he says that, through his servants, his debts are £2,600, whereof he did not know of more than £300.

In 1645 one of his worst misfortunes in public life befell him; this was his accusation and trial for "an invasion of the rights of



the people" in quelling mutinous practices in Hingham, from which charge, however, he was finally acquitted.

His address to the general court after acquittal is certainly worthy of repetition here.

He said: "I shall not now speak anything about the past proceedings of court, or the persons therein concerned." . . . "I am well satisfied that I was publickly accused, and that I am now publickly acquitted." . . . "But give me leave, before you go, to say something that may rectifie the opinions of many people." . . . "The questions that have troubled the country have been about the authority of the magistracy, and the liberty of the people. It is you who have called us unto this office; but being thus called, we have our authority from God," . . . "and the contempt of it has been vindicated by God with terrible examples of his vengeance. I entreat you to consider, that when you chuse magistrates, you take them from among yourselves, 'men subject unto like passions with yourselves.' If you see our infirmities, reflect on your own, and you will not be so severe censurers of ours. We count him a good servant who breaks not his covenant; the covenant between us and you is the oath you have taken of us, which is to this purpose, 'that we shall govern you, and judge your causes, according to God's laws, and our own, according to our best skill.' As for our skill, you must run the hazard of it; and if there be an error, not in the will, but only in the skill, it becomes you to bear it. Nor would I have you mistake in the point of your own liberty.

"There is a liberty of corrupt nature, which is affected by men. . . . We are all the worse for it. 'Tis the grand enemy of truth and peace, and all the ordinances of God are bent against it. But there is a civil, a moral, a federal liberty, which is the proper end and object of authority; it is a liberty for that only which is just and good; for this liberty you are to stand with the hazard of your very lives; and whatsoever crosses it is not authority, but a distemper thereof."

There were many disturbing and unrighteous elements here in those days, and the old proverb was often exemplified, that "where the Lord hath a church the devil hath a chapel."



Cotton Mather, in speaking of Winthrop, said: "Many were the afflictions of this righteous man! He lost much of his estate in a ship, and in a house, quickly after his coming to New England, besides the prodigious expense of it in the difficulties of his first coming hither. Afterwards his assiduous application unto the publick affairs (wherein he no longer belonged to himself, after the Republic had once made him her Chief Magistrate) made him so much to neglect his own private interests that an unjust steward ran him £2,500 in debt before he was aware; for the payment whereof he was forced, many years before his decease, to sell the most of what he had left unto him in the country.

"Albeit, by the observable blessings of God upon the posterity of this liberal man, his children, all of them, came to fair estates, and lived in good fashion and credit."

Of the ancestors of John Winthrop I have already made passing mention; they were men prominent in England and in high esteem, holding eminent positions, and being lords of the manor of Groton, as was also John.

Of his descendants we can speak with equal terms of praise. His son John, Jr., and grandson Fitz John were both governors of Connecticut. His son Stephen was a major-general and member of parliament for Scotland; his grandson Waitstill was chief justice of Massachusetts. In more recent years the descendants of the governor, the chief of whom are the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop and the lamented Major Theodore Winthrop, who was killed in the battle of Big Bethel, have nobly maintained the character of this remarkable family.

Many mementoes of the Winthrops are, or were until recently, extant, but that which recalls to us the early history and home of the family, the ancient church at Groton in England is, I think, the most interesting. In its graveyard is the tomb of the early Winthrops, with its inscription:—

"Heaven the Country, Christ the way. Here lies the body of Adam Winthrop, Esq., son of Adam Winthrop, Esq., who were patrons of this church and Lords of the Manor of Groton."

John Winthrop bore an unblemished character. His virtues were written in every line of his life; he was cultured, yet un-



assuming; liberal, yet conservative; gentle, yet firm; politic, yet conscientious; modest, yet courageous; a chivalric gentleman and noble Christian, and his memory deserves to be perpetuated on shaft of adamant, in letters of purest gold.

In closing, I wish to say, that if the day ever comes when the present desolate waste which was once Governor Winthrop's manor on the Mystic is again improved and restored, I trust that some lasting monument, worthy of the man, will be placed there, whose chiseled inscription shall relate to the young and old of the coming centuries, the story of his noble and unselfish character, his Christian virtues, and his distinguished services as the founder of our state.

---

### JOHN S. EDGERLY AND HIS HOME ON WINTER HILL

By Helen M. Despeaux

I have seen published many memories of Somerville events so far from correct, I am the more willing to tell what I know to be true of my father's life. When the semi-centennial of Somerville was celebrated in 1892, it seemed to me that the mention of the first settlers of the place was far less than that of those who followed in the city's ranks. Having occasion to write to the late John S. Hayes about that time, I mentioned the fact to him, and in his reply he said: "It has fallen to me to write a 'History of Somerville,' and it is my full intention to put conspicuously to the front the men who made the city possible by their great interest in the town." Mr. Hayes was taken ill, and unable to carry out the task assigned him. We can forgive him our part in it, as he gave in the twenty-fifth Annual Report of the Somerville Public Library such a laudatory notice of my brother Edward Everett Edgerly, whose portrait hangs in the library building to-day. He said in closing: "May his memory in connection with this library prove an incentive to the youth of to-day, not only to live to accomplish our ideal of personal work, but also to help others to think high thoughts, to do brave deeds, and live a noble and blameless life." Unfortunately, the youth seldom see



these Reports. Except for mention here and there of people and landmarks, I think no history of Somerville has ever been written, and I should not presume to write one; but I am asked to give you this evening a sketch of John S. Edgerly and his home on Winter Hill.

Mr. Edgerly was born in Meredith, N. H., not far from Winnepeaukee, November 30, 1801. He was the son of Samuel Edgerly, who married Betsey Smith, January, 1794. There were twelve children in the family. In the earlier generation, his first ancestor who came to this country was Thomas Edgerly, before 1665. He landed probably at Portsmouth, and was received as an inhabitant of Oyster Bay, township of Dover. In the generation that followed there was much trouble with the Indians, and in some cases they were massacred by them. Like many another young man before and since, when he had reached the "years of discretion" he was ambitious to see what the larger life of the city of Boston had for him; and I judge he left home for that purpose when about twenty years of age. I presume he had the struggle most people do to find the right thing to do. But he became a stonemason (physical labor was not considered as menial then as now). I have no doubt his love for stone was acquired by this labor, for we always had stone steps and stone flagging to our front door before others did, and I believe he advocated strongly stone steps around the Unitarian church building that has since been demolished.

After leaving this business, he went to work in the grain business for a Mr. Vinal. We have seen in some reports that it was Deacon Robert Vinal, and that he was a member of the household; but on applying to Mr. Quincy Vinal, son of Deacon Robert, he said he thought it was without foundation. But he does remember hearing his father say that when Mr. Edgerly first came to Boston, he was the smartest young man he ever knew of, desirous to learn, very energetic, and busy every moment. Be that as it may, I know he was well acquainted with Deacon and Mrs. Vinal, and they were the only ones from Charlestown present at the marriage of Mr. Edgerly at a little home in Boston over seventy years ago, from which house he moved, with his



wife and two children, in 1836, to the house that he had bought on Winter Hill.\*

The house is between the road to what is now Arlington and that to Medford. It was built in 1805 by Colonel John Sweetser, and was called "The Odin House," and as I have heard that it was formerly a "tavern," I presume it was at that time. At some time later it was occupied by Dr. Samuel Parkman. From 1826 to 1830 it was occupied by the Hon. Edward Everett, and in 1836 Mr. Edgerly took possession. He always liked things on a large scale, which doubtless accounts for his buying so large a place; and after a few years the house had to be enlarged. Mr. Edgerly, though what might be termed a self-made man, was, nevertheless, of importance to the town, and in 1842 he succeeded, with several others who were indignant at the treatment from Charlestown (of which it seemed to be the fag end), in obtaining permission from the Legislature to become a separate town, the limits of which were as they are to-day. There was great rejoicing when the decision was announced, and 100 guns were fired from Prospect Hill. The first five selectmen of the new town were Nathan Tufts, Sr. (chairman), John S. Edgerly, Caleb W. Leland, Luther Mitchell, and Francis Bowman. Charles E. Gilman was clerk; Oliver Tufts and John C. Magoun, assessors; Edmund Tufts, treasurer and collector. The population was 1,013.

Shortly after Mr. Edgerly was made chairman (and we are told he held that position for fourteen consecutive years), his interest in the welfare of the town was almost paramount to everything else, notwithstanding he did a good business in the grain trade in Boston. He was also on the school committee and overseers of the poor, and always had time to give a helping hand

\*Mrs. Edgerly was the daughter of Moses and Lydia Watts Woods, and was born in Hillsborough, N. H., May 1, 1807. There were nine children. Mr. Woods figured quite prominently in military affairs, and was colonel of the Ninth New Hampshire regiment. His father, Moses Woods, 1st, was one of the forty at Concord Bridge who took up arms against the soldiers of King George III, April 19, 1775, and "fired the shot heard round the world." He later came with the regiment that marched to Roxbury March 4, 1776, and still later was first lieutenant in Colonel Samuel Bullard's regiment, that became part of the Northern army.

Mr. and Mrs. Edgerly had three sons and five daughters: John Woods Edgerly, Annie E. W. Edgerly (now Mixer), Charles Brown Edgerly, Adine Franz Edgerly (afterwards Pratt), Helen Mar. Edgerly (now Despeaux), Edward Everett Edgerly, Madeline Lemalia Edgerly, and Caroline Edgerly.



and a bright and merry word to anyone about him. He never "passed by on the other side," and never was there an empty seat in his carriage or wagon if there was anyone who wanted to be helped along. He represented the town in general court, and on one occasion, when a member of the House, in making a speech, aired his Latin phrases rather too frequently, Mr. Edgerly arose and said: "Mr. Speaker, I move that the gentleman be required to translate his Latin for the benefit of the English-speaking people." Another arose and asked to make an amendment to that motion, to the effect that money be appropriated to educate those people. The joke was appreciated, but had Dr. Edward Everett Hale been present, he would most likely have said: "Not so fast, my friend. Education does not consist in learning Latin, or French, or Sanscrit, or even mathematics, but it is rather the training that develops a man on all sides to take a broad view of life." I am sure there was nothing narrow or sordid in Mr. Edgerly—his observation and experience made him an all-around man. Hence he was sent to the Legislature, and was made a member of the school committee, for though, in a way, we need professional men in such places, we also need good business men, who can not only count the cost, but compute the interest. As overseer of the poor, he was ever ready, after a day of business in Boston, to take his horse and sleigh, and with lantern and shovel make a path to some house where poverty and suffering existed; and the chances are that there was plenty of nutritious food to keep the bodies sustained, while the hearts ached with trouble and misfortune.

It is hard to look back and imagine the streets about Winter Hill and other places so banked up with snow as to need a shovel to start out on one's way; for with the electric cars and electric lights, life seems comparatively easy, and if not a very pleasant evening, there are many who say in these times, "I think we won't go out to-night, it is rather stormy." But with most men of those times duty was a principle, and they did not swerve. Many may say, "But there wasn't so much brain work then; we get more mentally tired." I have heard it said by advocates of physical culture that physical work is the very best antidote for



too much mental labor, and if a girl is overtaxed with study don't send her to a dance for recreation, but rather let her wash dishes, or do some other manual labor that is not exciting. Can you tell me of many men who, like Mr. Edgerly, conducted a regular business in Boston, carried on a small farm at his home, supplied his neighbors with milk and eggs, and had cut \$1,000 worth of hay, besides what he needed for his own cattle and horses? Mr. Edgerly, as I said before, liked everything on a large scale,—the highest horse, the biggest sheep, the largest fowl, and all such things he would buy, and then call the neighbors in to see and enjoy their surprise. He also kept a good driving horse, and often a pretty fast one, and I can recall twice in my memory of his being thrown from his sleigh and dragged some distance; but someone who knew him would bring him home, and in a few days he would be about his duties again.

Mr. Edgerly was for many years on the standing committee of the Unitarian church, and ever stood outside awaiting the last person to enter, that no stranger should lack for a seat. I have heard my father say he would like to be a minister, that he might work all the week and preach on Sunday.

After about thirty years living on Winter Hill, two sons and two daughters having gone out into new homes, Mr. Edgerly sold the Winter-Hill house to Mr. Hittenger, who spent much money on it, but except in removing the front piazza and putting on a porch with a tower, there was not much change.

There were lots of fine, pleasant neighbors, and the first I will mention is John C. Magoun, who, being a farmer, had time to be assessor and one of the overseers of the poor. He occupied both positions several years. He lived in the old Adams place, where his wife was born, married, and died, and one daughter and granddaughter still remain there. His wife had two brothers, Samuel Adams, who was always called "Uncle Sammy," and another, Joseph Adams, who lived down the hill further, and was the father-in-law of Mr. Aaron Sargent, who is well known as the former treasurer of Somerville, previous to the time of our beloved and departed friend, Mr. John F. Cole. Mrs. Magoun had still another brother, Charles Adams, father of the distin-



guished singer. Mr. Magoun was a fine, pleasant looking man, and as I saw his photo yesterday, I could still see the face so benign, as I saw it so many years ago.

Mr. John Boles lived across the way from Mr. Magoun, and though not so well known to the people at large, he and his family were much loved by all the neighbors, and when the Edgerly carryall could not take the children to the high school on a stormy day, the Boles carriage did.

Next came the Woodburys, a large family, and when we needed our houses freshened up, either inside or out, Mr. Woodbury was the man to do it. He was a fine painter, and his graining was so perfect it was almost like the natural wood. Next door to Mr. Edgerly was Mr. William Jaques, with wife and son. Mr. Jaques was one of the three sons of old Colonel Jaques who owned Ten Hills Farm. All the brothers have passed away, but one son and family still remain at the foot of Winter Hill. Uncle Edmund Tufts, so-called, lived nearly opposite, with his charming sister, Aunt Abbie. But they have both passed away, and the site of their little home is occupied by a block of buildings.

I had nearly forgotten to speak of the little schoolhouse, where now stands the Orthodox Congregational church. Here we learned our A B C's. More than one of the teachers boarded at Mr. Edgerly's, for where there is a large family, there is always room for one more.

Next to Edmund Tufts lived Mr. Jonathan Brown, who still answers to the roll-call at ninety-two years, the last of the oldest friends, but his life has been a regular one. Being associated with a bank, his hours were shorter than other business men's, and he had time to enjoy his garden and plenty of choice books. We were always glad on Christmas morning to have the Brown boys bring over their new books, for while we had our share of the good things the Father and Mother Santa Claus brought on "the night before Christmas, when all through the house, not a creature was stirring, not even a mouse," we didn't always have the books our neighbors had, and it was an added pleasure for each to enjoy the other's gifts. Next came Charles Forster's



family. Words fail to express the love and respect everyone felt for this saintly man. I cannot tell his best characteristics, but, literally, "none knew him but to love him, or named him but to praise." The Forster school on Sycamore street is named for him. The Stickney & Poors were among our "smart" and "spicey" friends, and many the good times we had at their expense. There was a saying that they kept a carpenter employed between them all the time, and their homes showed it. It seemed such a pity to me that the Stickney house should be torn down, when, by its being enlarged as it was, it was the most spacious and social of all the homes on Winter Hill. It had been used previously by Mr. Charles Strickland, who was greatly interested in the school work, and also at one time by the Riddles,—parents of the distinguished reader, George Riddle. The Brooks, I must not pass by. Mrs. Brooks was of delicate health, and did not mingle as much with others. Ex-Mayor Perry married the daughter. On the opposite side were Messrs. Oakman & Eldridge, whose houses, when building, it was thought would obstruct the view from the Edgerly mansion, and although they did to some extent, we could still see from the second story, right over their roofs down to the lower light in the harbor.

Mr. Zadoc Bowman lived next door, and though I do not associate him so much in town affairs, he gave us his son, Hon. Selwyn Z. Bowman, so well known in the affairs of the city.

Mr. S. A. Carleton came next, and was, I think, connected with the school board. Mr. Fitz lived and still lives next door to Mr. Carleton. He married into the Magoun family, and was brother to Mrs. Gilbert Tufts and Mrs. Nathan Tufts, 2d. Here I may say another daughter of Mr. Magoun married the nephew of Mrs. Edgerly, and was connected with Mr. Edgerly in his store for a time, and was a member of the household, Mr. Henry F. Woods, who was interested in the school committee, was one of the first of the common council, and also commissioner of the sinking fund.

Mr. William Tufts and Mr. Asa Tufts were among the older residents of the hill, but I don't recall anything especial about them—but they were kindly, pleasant neighbors. Mr. Jacob T.



Glines, though not exactly on the hill, was much interested in town affairs, and his third son has been your honored mayor for the past three or four years. The oldest son was sacrificed in the Civil War. I might go on indefinitely enumerating names of good friends around us, but I must close the list by simply the mention of the Downers, the other Woodburys, the Hardings, the Spencers, and Sawyers, etc., etc.

After leaving Winter Hill, Mr. Edgerly moved to East Somerville, where he lived at 1 and 3 Webster street some years, and passed away January 20, 1872. His wife followed him about ten years later, and there now remain but two of the large family who so dearly loved the old spot that our infancy and childhood so fondly knew on Winter Hill.

There is an Edgerly schoolhouse on Cross street, East Somerville, and as long as it stands may it prove an honor to the honored memory of John S. Edgerly.

---

## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENINSULA REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

We have seen that Mr. Sweetser's resignation as master of the grammar school went into effect March 6, 1750 (O. S.). The day before, a committee, consisting of James Russell, Ebenezer Kent, Edward Sheafe, Jr., Samuel Bradstreet, and Samuel Henley, "met to see about a new master and perhaps a second man to teach writing." Mr. John Rand was engaged to finish out the term until May, at twenty shillings per week. This committee reported that "it is for the interest of the town to have two masters, one for teaching Latin, the other for writing and arithmetic, as it is impossible for any one man to teach the children of the town in both capacities."

In May the town voted a marvelous sum, as compared with the amounts of previous years,—£900, old tenor,—for two schools within the Neck; and as if to satisfy our curiosity, the record



explains that this is equivalent to £120 lawful money. On the fifth of June, as the committee had secured no teachers, they asked for more time. July 6, 1750, Mr. Timothy Goodwin, no doubt a native of Charlestown, was hired to teach in the old town house, as it was desired to put the school building in repair. This engagement evidently did not hold, for it is recorded, along with a second request for more time, that the committee have agreed with Mr. Matthew Cushing to keep the grammar school, at a rate of £60 lawful money, and that he began June 12; and with Mr. Abijah Hartt to keep the writing school, at the same rate, and that he opened his school July 19. We are also told that the old town house can be fitted up for about £34. This sum is accordingly voted, and it is understood that this building will be for the use of the Latin school.

I have been unable to learn anything of these two teachers. Mr. Cushing, we have seen, was keeping a private school in Charlestown at the time of his appointment. He was doubtless descended from Matthew Cushing, one of the early settlers of Hingham. The history of that town mentions a Matthew, son of Solomon and Sarah (Loring) Cushing, born April 4, 1720, a graduate of Harvard College, 1739, who removed to New York, and died there in 1779. This may be the Charlestown teacher.

Evidently there were two sides to the school question, and many were dissatisfied with the way Mr. Sweetser had been treated; for at the next May meeting, 1751, the town voted to have but one schoolmaster within the Neck for the present year, and it is recorded that there will be no appropriation "until the choice of a schoolmaster be made." The meeting then and there, "by hand vote," elected Mr. Seth Sweetser as master of the grammar and writing school for the year ensuing, and his salary was fixed at £500, equivalent to £66 13s. 4d., lawful money. "He accepts, and will begin when the other master's term expires." Mr. Cushing was paid in full up to the date when he was dismissed, and Mr. Hartt received £30, lawful money, in full to July 19, 1751.

Under the same date, the record continues: "Considering the disorder of the youth of this town, not only on week days,



but on the Lord's Day, it was voted to visit the school every three months with one of the ministers of the town, & to use our best endeavors to put a stop thereto, & to begin to-morrow, the day Mr. Sweetser takes possession. Accordingly, the selectmen, with Rev. Mr. Hull Abbott, visited the school, and told the scholars they were determined the guilty should not go unpunished; after which Mr. Abbott exhorted them in a solemn manner & concluded with prayer."

October 19. "The selectmen with Rev. Mr. Prentise visited the school & think the method will have the desired effect. The visit ended with prayer."

There is frequent mention of "visiting day" up to 1775; after that date, to the end of the century, though not a matter of record, except at intervals, it was evidently a custom held in high respect. The august body of selectmen was sometimes increased on these occasions by the presence of the overseers of the poor. One of the ministers was always invited, and often he was accompanied by his deacons. From these visits we learn that the schools were in session six days in the week. Frequently the hour set was 10 o'clock on Saturday.

The two ministers whom we have named for many years exercised their hortatory powers on the Charlestown boys. The following digression may not be uninteresting. In 1733 the town built a ministerial house for Mr. Abbott, "50 ft. by 19 ft. and 18 ft. high, with a gambrel roof, three stacks of chimneys, & a room 10 ft. square at the backside for a study." On the death of Mrs. Abbott in 1763, there was a public funeral, and the amount raised was £414 4s. 10d., or, in lawful money, £55 4s. 7d. At the funeral of the worthy gentleman himself, who was buried at the expense of the town, some of the charges were: For twelve gold rings, £8; for Lisbon wine, Malaga wine, and W. I. rum, £5 16s. 8d.; for lemons, sugar, pipes, and tobacco, £3 8s. 6d.; gloves, £10 1s. 6d.; deathshead and cross bones, fifteen shillings. The Rev. Thomas Prentice died June 17, 1782, and that day a special town meeting was called, to see what action the citizens would take "relative to the funeral."



Late in 1751 this little community suffered from a visitation more terrible than that which came upon Master Sweetser's boys,—the smallpox broke out, though not for the first time. A petition read at town meeting the following May shows that the people of the outlying districts tried to keep the disease from spreading among them. "Forty inhabitants (without the Neck) prayed that the meeting may be adjourned without the Neck by reason of the smallpox being in town. Voted that this meeting do not adjourn without the Neck." Later on, however, the point seems to have been carried, for June 9 "it was voted to adjourn the town meeting to the Common by reason of the Infection." In 1764 there was another smallpox "scare," and April 4, in reply to the question "whether the town will give the inhabitants leave to go into inoculation for themselves & families at all," it was voted in the affirmative.

March 4, 1754. It was voted that the old town house be improved for a spinning (girls') school. The next May Mr. Daniel Russell was made chairman of a committee of three for this school, and £64 was appropriated for repairs. One hundred and fifty pounds was also voted for renovating the meeting house, schoolhouse, and other public property. This is the first evidence, so far as I find, that the daughters of the town were getting any direct benefit from the taxes that were paid by their fathers. It was an experiment that probably did not last long.

The amount of £500, or its equivalent, £66 13s. 4d., lawful money, was voted annually for the grammar master until 1764. July 2 of that year, "it was voted that, instead of an addition being made to the present school, the committee make such repairs as are of necessity & likewise repair the Old Town House suitable for another master whose business shall be to instruct in writing & cyphering, & that the sum of £50, l. m., be raised to procure one." This sum was afterwards increased to £55, and in January the bill for repairs on the schoolhouse amounted to £14 11s. May 12, 1766, upon petition of William Harris, writing teacher, desiring an addition to his salary, the town agreed to give him the same as the grammar master received. The



amount for each remained at this figure, £66 13s. 4d., lawful money, until 1775. That year we do not find any sum appropriated for the schools. In fact, the town records show no entry of the selectmen's proceedings from April 7 to November 24, 1775. February 10 they voted to make their usual spring visit the following Friday morning. The next item relating to the town school is under date of March 6, 1776, less than a fortnight before Evacuation Day, when it was voted that Mr. Harris have an order for his salary in full as writing teacher to April 19, 1775. This entry seems to us a significant one. From that Thursday morning, September 1, 1774, when the Old Powder House was surprised and rifled of its stores by the British, excitement ran high in Charlestown, Cambridge, and the immediate neighborhood. The historian Frothingham has left us a vivid picture of the harrowing events which tried men's souls. All through the succeeding fall and winter there were meetings of anxious men in council. Minutes of their proceedings had to be sent to similar bodies in other sections, inquiries answered, resolutions drafted. Altogether, Mr. Sweetser, the faithful guardian of the grammar school, as clerk and corresponding secretary of these conventions, may well have had his mind diverted from his pupils. On the nineteenth of April, we are told, the scholars were dismissed and Charlestown school closed. When it opened again—we are not told exactly when—the scourge of war had done its fearful work. The four hundred buildings clustered at the foot of Breed's Hill were practically wiped away. On that memorable seventeenth of June, Frothingham says, "The conflagration spared not a dwelling house," and a population of two or three thousand were rendered homeless. But from the day of the Concord and Lexington fight, when thrilling incidents occurred on our own soil of Somerville, the inhabitants had abandoned their homes on the peninsula, and the place was practically deserted. On account of the menacing position of the enemy's ships, no attempt to bring back order and domestic quiet was made until after the Evacuation.

The two school buildings which have interested us so long thus ended their careers of usefulness at the same time. The last



item we find concerning either of them is under date of October 15, 1770, when Captain Foster was made chairman of a committee of three to make repairs on the floor of the writing school. Hon. Josiah Bartlett, M. D., in his historical sketch, delivered at the opening of Washington Hall in 1813, tells us somewhat exactly where these two structures were located on Windmill or Town Hill. At the town meeting of May 16, 1776, it was voted not to raise any money (for schools), "supposing the town income will defray the charges that will unavoidably arise." Expenses had to be brought within the smallest figure, and the schools suffered in consequence. October 10 of that year, however, things were looking somewhat brighter, for it was decided to raise £60 for the schools within and without the Neck. But no attempt at re-building or finding permanent quarters for the Charlestown school, which for several years after this was reduced to one, was made the year of the battle, or even the next. We will leave this part of our subject, to speak of the two teachers to whom frequent reference has been made.

Captain William Harris was the only son of Cary Harris, of Boston. He was born July 2, 1744, and married in 1767 Rebecca, the daughter of Thaddeus Mason, Esq. (Harvard College, 1728). He died October 30, 1778, at the early age of thirty-four. Of his six children, the eldest, Thaddeus Mason Harris, D. D., born in Charlestown in 1768, and a graduate of Harvard in 1787, was one of the distinguished divines of his time. For many years he was settled over the church at Dorchester, where he died in 1842. William Harris must have begun his school duties in Charlestown in 1765, for December 7, 1767, the selectmen voted him £1 16s. for ink "for two years past." We have seen that his services ended with the disbanding of his scholars April 19, 1775.

[To be continued.]





QUINCY ADAMS VINAL



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1904.

Vol. III

No. 3



## CONTENTS.

---

THOMAS BRIGHAM THE PURITAN—AN ORI-	15
NAL SETTLER	Wilson E. Brigham
THE TEACHING OF LOCAL HISTORY IN THE	23
PUBLIC SCHOOLS	John S. Emerson
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENIN-	29
SULA (continued)	Frank Mariner Hawe
QUINCY ADAMS VINAL (with frontispiece)	Charles D. Elton

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street  
Somerville, Mass.

**Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.**

**Single copies, 25 cents.**

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

---

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN F. AYER, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. III.

OCTOBER, 1904

No. 3

---

## THOMAS BRIGHAM THE PURITAN—AN ORIGINAL SETTLER

By William E. Brigham

Thomas Brigham the Puritan, the common ancestor of the Brigham family in this country, was an original, if not the original, settler of what now is Somerville. I may say frankly at the outset that I have made no study of the contemporaries of Thomas, nor have I ascertained the location of the original town lines of Watertown, Cambridge, and Charlestown; but for the purposes of this sketch the familiar designations are sufficient. In so far as they deal with the essential facts of the life of our interesting subject and his descendants, the statements which follow are founded upon trustworthy evidence; and where there is doubt I have indicated it.

For example, good old Rev. Abner Morse, the first genealogist of the Brigham family, would have it that Thomas came of noble blood, in direct descent from the lords of Allerdale, whose reputation for "courtesy, honor, truth, and justice" filled all Cumberland; and the worthy clergyman works into his pages the sage suggestion to posterity that "it is scandalous to degenerate."

Later researches prove nothing more definite of the English origin of Thomas the Puritan than a strong inference that he hailed from Yorkshire. There are four Brigham places in Great Britain, as follows:

First—Town of Brigham, Driffield, in Dickering Wapentake, East Riding, Yorkshire; and it is germane to say that a large percentage of the people of this neighborhood are known by the surname of Brigham.

Second—There is a Brigham parish in Allerdale Ward, above Derwent, Cumberlandshire. To this locality tradition assigns the vague (because ancient) references to the manor of



Brigham and the lords of Allerdale. Wordsworth penned a graceful sonnet to the "Nun's Well" of this place.

Third—From the Acts of Parliament of Scotland we learn how that assembly convened at Brigham, near Berwick-on-Tweed, on two occasions during the period when it was peripatetic, namely, in 1188 and 1289. You will also recall that a "treaty of Brigham" was signed here.

Fourth—Brigham, Norfolk county, Eng., which is mentioned in the Calendar Close Rolls, time of King Edward II.

The Domesday Book mentions also four other Brigham towns, under various spellings, but they are of no important interest in the present connection.

Burke describes eight different armorial bearings by Brighams, of which four are of Yorkshire families, and a fifth of Yorkshire descent. The most persistent Brigham line occurs in connection with the annals of Yorkshire; but late researches incline to the belief that there were no less than four distinct Brigham lines, from one of which sprang Thomas. The belief that this was of Yorkshire is strengthened by the fact that Sir Richard Saltonstall, his friend and neighbor in Cambridge, and upon whose suggestion he may have come from England, was of a Yorkshire family.

Without detaining you too long with details of more remote interest, I may say that the name Brigham has been spelled in no less than eighteen different ways. It is Anglo-Saxon, and comes from two words meaning bridge and house. It originally signified a village of freemen situated by a bridge. The name is authentically traced back to the period of Henry I., who was born in 1068; and it is said by English Brighams now living that it was borne with honor in Palestine in the time of the Crusades.

I fear, however, that we are getting farther away rather than nearer to Thomas Brigham the Puritan. The first and only authentic mention of him found in England is in Camden Hotton's book, entitled "Lists of Emigrants from England to America, 1600-1700," compiled from London Admiralty reports.

From this we learn that "18 April, 1635, Tho. Briggaham" embarked from England on the ship "Suzan & Ellin, Edward



Payne, Master," for New England. In the same year Paige, in his admirable history of Cambridge, reports the arrival at Watertown, the fourth settlement in Massachusetts Bay colony, of our Thomas and thirty-six other males. Of these, some seventeen appear to have come by the "Suzan and Ellin." Surely we of the name of Brigham may trace our ancestry back to the foundation stones of the old commonwealth.

Thomas was then thirty-two years of age, and he appears quickly to have attained to respect and prominence. He was made a "freeman" in 1637, when his name first appears on the records of Watertown. He then became the proprietor of a fourteen-acre lot, of seven-eighths of the size and adjoining that of Sir Richard Saltonstall. This land was "bought of John Dogget & bounded W. by the honestall of Sir Richard Saltonstall, S. by Charles River, & E. by Cambridge former line," being on that strip which was taken from Watertown in 1754 and annexed to Cambridge.

He settled hard by, and built his house in Cambridge, on a lot of three and one-half acres which had been assigned him by the townsmen in 1638. The exact location of our Puritan's homestead cannot be stated. Paige places it at the easterly corner of Brattle and Ash streets. Morse quotes the boundaries of the lot, which would be unintelligible to this audience, but says it was about two-thirds of a mile west of the site of Harvard University—which institution was established, by the way, a year after Thomas the Puritan arrived in Cambridge; while our own family historian, W. I. T. Brigham, is sure only that a part of Thomas Brigham's house lot was in the east boundary line of the original limits of Watertown, or about at the line of the present Sparks street. It is certain that the lot was bounded on the south by the northern bend of Charles river, which comes at the foot of Sparks street.

At this point was the first high bank above the site of Fort Washington, and it offered the first facility on the north side for a wharf. Here, according to trustworthy tradition, a wharf was built early, and no doubt a storehouse to accommodate the inhabitants of Watertown and Cambridge, which had no wharf



until 1650. Morse kindly infers that Thomas Brigham built these, and that he was a commission merchant. Windmill Hill, he says, must have been upon his Watertown lot and near the wharf. Had he not, asks Morse, also built a mill thereon prior to 1638, when the townsmen assigned the land adjacent to him on the southeast, and reserved a highway on the town line to this hill, which would also have secured access to the wharf?

The south side of his original fourteen-acre lot is at present a poor Irish settlement; but the north runs through to Brattle street, along which it extends many hundred feet, right in the heart of Cambridge upper-tendom. The Washington school, descendant of the "Faire Grammar Schoole," the first school in Cambridge, is on this land.

With Saltonstall, Dudley, Nicholas Danforth, and other chief men for his neighbors and associates, Thomas Brigham lived on his comfortable homestead until 1648. Having been admitted to the freeman's oath, he, in 1639, was chosen a member of the board of townsmen, who exercised supreme authority in municipal matters, and had the distribution of the public lands. He served as townsmen or selectman in 1640, 1642, and 1647, and as constable in 1639 and 1642. Such honors as these at that period cannot be lightly esteemed now.

He was the proprietor of many animals, and in 1647, when the town contained ninety houses, 135 ratable citizens, and had been settled seventeen years, he owned nearly one-third of all the swine. Morse argued, also, from this honorable, but unpoetic, fact that he must have possessed a mill, from the toll of which he could easily feed so large a number.

The proud possession of these hogs is not also without its sad feature for the descendants of Thomas the Puritan; for while it gave him the distinction of wealth, and therefore power, it also got him into trouble. He was repeatedly fined for failing to observe the law relative to the keeping of hogs. However, as if in consideration of the feelings of his descendants, it is recorded that the selectmen, in their order for collecting fines of "brother Brigham," as they called him, voluntarily abated one-third of the amount.



From another curious record now extant it is learned, also, that the good Thomas was not without other than official sympathy; for it is soberly related in the chronicles that upon one occasion, when an officer visited the homestead to impound some of the porcine offenders, or upon other similar duty, the worthy Mercy, spouse of Goodman Thomas, made such a hostile demonstration that he was fain to escape with no bones broken.

We have been a long time reaching the Somerville line, but we are almost here. The townsmen of Cambridge divided the common lands to settlers according to their estates. By this rule Thomas Brigham drew more than quadruple the amount of most others. In the last and principal division he, out of 115 assignees, received 180 acres, the thirteenth largest share, while others received only a few acres. He received grants in Brighton, Shawshine (Billerica), West Cambridge, and Charlestown, amounting to hundreds of acres. His first grant in Charlestown was of one acre made in 1645.

In 1648 there was laid out to him seventy-two acres "on the rocks" upon Charlestown line; and later in the same year he bought of William Hamlet ten acres in Fresh Pond Meadow, on the northwest side of the great swamp. Of these he took immediate possession, and built upon the former.

By the help of Peter B. Brigham, Esq., who died in 1872, "The Rocks" have been found and the place of our old settler's last habitation identified. To quote Morse, who wrote in 1859, the site is now in Somerville, "about one-third of a mile south of Tufts College, and 100 rods east of Cambridge Poorhouse, on the southwest side of an uplift of clay slate about seventy feet in height, overlooking Fresh Pond one and one-half miles at the south."

A few rods southwest of this, continues Morse, there is another uplift of the same formation and of about the same size and altitude, but the rock does not, as in the former, crop out, yet it was doubtless one of "The Rocks" which constituted a well-known landmark; for Thomas Danforth, as if connected with Thomas Brigham, immediately after the above assignment, purchased of Nicholas Wyeth forty-eight acres "upon the Rocks



near Alewife meadow, having Thos. Brigham on the north." This lot must have included the site of the poorhouse, and probably the S. W. rock, and by its boundaries it contributes to the identification of Brigham's location, which had been ascertained from other evidence.

I have perambulated the territory described here by Mr. Morse, yet without my assurance I think you would readily conceive that the second homestead of the Brigham family in this country is none other than our own Clarendon Hill, and that "The Rocks," so celebrated in our family history, are now serving the humble purpose of the city stone quarry. The house, I take it, was only a few yards, or rods, south of the present crown of the quarry, and commanded a view straight across the meadow to Fresh Pond. As the pious Morse says:—

"Here lived Thomas Brigham, contented with his portion of good things, which the millionaire is not. Here he read his Bible and communed with his Redeemer. Here he interceded for his race, completed his victory, and left for his coronation. Hallowed be the place; hallowed his memory! Here let his children assemble to praise and pray, know and be known; and build up a friendship strong and enduring as 'The Rocks.'"

Thomas Brigham died in the Somerville homestead, if I may so call it, December 18, 1653, aged fifty years. His estate became involved, perhaps through business reverses—it is suggested because the erection of a grist mill on Charles river ruined his windmill—yet it was more than respectable for the time. After the final settlement, there remained his lot on Charles river, valued at £40; upland and meadow in the hither end of Watertown, valued at £60; ten acres in Rockie Meadow, valued at £15; and a house lot of four acres, with house and barn, estimated at £70. He left a spacious house, containing hall, parlor, kitchen and two chambers, all completely furnished and stored with provisions.

His personal property included many articles of luxury, and his wardrobe was that of a gentleman. He had two bound "servants, five horses, fourteen sheep, and ten cattle," and his inventory footed up £449 4s. 9d., or about \$5,000 in our present cur-



rency, relative prices considered. Morse reckons that at six per cent. the fortune of Thomas Brigham the Puritan would amount to more than a billion of dollars now. This is a crowning example of the old genealogist's concern for posterity.

The wife was appointed sole executrix of the will. She was assisted by the distinguished William Brattle, of Boston, and Deputy Governor Thomas Danforth accepted appointment as trustee, and left the trust to his own executor at his death.

The final resting place of our common ancestor is not known. Morse thinks it must have been Medford, but there is much stronger reason for believing it to be in Cambridge, probably in what is known as the "old cemetery." Time has buried a fact of priceless interest to the descendants of Thomas the Puritan, and the spot may never be unveiled.

It were unfair to close the record without a word of the partner of the joys and sorrows of our Thomas. In 1637 he married Mercy Hurd, a comely woman somewhat his junior, of whom tradition has brought down a high character. It is declared that she and her sister were so tantalized in England for their non-conformity that they resolved on seeking their freedom and fortunes in New England, whither they arrived unattended by husbands or lovers. Were romantic adventure their quest, they came to the right place, for they were snapped up like Monday bargains; and, as the sage Morse observes, if the number of worthy husbands whom a lady married is the measure of her worth, our maternal ancestor was a most worthy and attractive woman, for she married no less than three.

These were Thomas Brigham, who died in 1653, by whom she had five children; Edmund Rice, of Marlboro, by whom she had two daughters; and William Hunt, of Marlboro, who died in 1667. Mercy Hurd-Brigham-Rice-Hunt died December 23, 1693, after a third widowhood of twenty-six years.

During this period she saw two bloody Indian wars. During the first Marlboro was burned, and she, with one of her sons, is believed to have fled to their former home on "The Rocks" in Somerville, while her other sons went in pursuit of the enemy.

The children of Thomas and Mercy Hurd-Brigham were



Mary, Thomas, John, Hannah, and Samuel. All were identified with the early history of Marlboro, whence their mother had removed upon the death of Thomas the Puritan. The men became very prominent in town life, and Samuel, it is said, founded the tanning and shoe industry. The present writer, although coming immediately from a branch resident in Vermont, is a direct descendant of Thomas, the first son.

This, at greater length than I had intended, is something of the story of Thomas Brigham the Puritan. Cradle and grave alike unknown, of his life there is yet left a record of honor, probity, and rugged accomplishment in which his descendants may well take honest pride.

---

In justice to Mr. Brigham, it is no more than right that the following letter should be printed:—

Boston, September 25, 1904.

My dear Mr. Foss: I have at hand yours of the 24th inst., with proof of my article on Thomas Brigham the Puritan.

I am afraid there is some misunderstanding in this matter, for the evening I read the paper I made the express request that it be not printed. Mr. Charles D. Elliot is inclined to think the original Brigham place was in Arlington rather than in Somerville, and some of his facts and arguments so impressed me that I decided at once to give no more publicity to the matter until I could investigate further. Mr. Elliot kindly offered to take up the matter with me at my convenience, but I was out of town from May to September, and since have been immersed in another (and this time victorious) political campaign. I can give the matter no thought until after election.

My error, if there is one, is due to my confidence in the alleged researches made by the late Peter B. Brigham, as reported by Morse (page 4, "Brigham," by Rev. Abner Morse, A. M., press of H. W. Dutton & Son, Boston, 1859). The identification here is explicit, but the description of the old site is that of Morse, I should judge.

"The Rocks" was the name of the old Brigham place, and Mr. Elliot points out two important facts: one, that there is no mention of Thomas Brigham in the early Charlestown records, which were well kept; and that "The Rocks" was the name of "a well-known ancient landmark," as Morse styles it, in Arlington, not in Somerville.

Brigham's identification was wholly with Arlington (or Cambridge), except in the matter of this site; and even before Mr. Elliot spoke it always had puzzled me why Thomas should have trekked off to Clarendon Hill, while his affiliations were all with the banks of the Charles river in Cambridge.



My own pride of authorship never was very great, anyway, and in this instance I am only too glad to sacrifice it in the interest of historical accuracy.

If it would save you embarrassment, I suppose you might print the sketch with this letter as a footnote, but even that is a little awkward, at least, for me. I am, however, always an extremely busy man, and if the publication of this paper and correspondence would bring me any volunteer aid in clearing up a matter which is of some local interest, and of especial interest to the Brigham Family Association, which is now preparing a new "Brigham Book," I would welcome it.

Sincerely yours,

William E. Brigham.

---

## THE TEACHING OF LOCAL HISTORY IN THE PUBLIC SCHOOLS

By John S. Emerson

Someone has said, "Geography is the eyes of history." How true is this in the region where one lives! The boy is on the very ground, to start with. He will follow the teacher's "On the top of that hill" with all of his mind, but the spot on the map of some distant region with his eye only. The men and the scenes of the Revolution are almost as impersonal and vague as those of which he reads in his morning devotional exercises. But show him the ground they trod, the houses in which they lived and slept, and they become real men instead of names only. His pictures of scenes become realistic and vivid. His attitude immediately changes from passive to active. He becomes not merely a recipient, but an investigator. He will work from pure love of his subject,—a difficult result to secure in many other matters.

The following are two of many incidents that might be given to illustrate the enthusiastic interest children naturally take in this subject. After the first lesson of the year on Somerville history, the teacher had an errand on Prospect Hill. On the way up, he met some of the class coming down. The next morning one of them said before school, "You went up to see where the flag was raised, and to read the tablet, didn't you?" He had to confess that he had another errand, but was glad to say that he visited the spot. The pupil said, "We went up and read the tab-



let and hunted for the old tent-holes said to be visible still. We tried to imagine the place and the country round as it looked then. I wish," she added, "I could live, if only for a week or so, in those times, to see how this region looked, and to see the men,—Washington and Putnam and the rest."

The regular course in history had been covered, but the teacher had not known of any such longings to live in another century, to see for herself how things were, and how the country looked. That first lesson in local history had come home, had appealed to the imagination, and had thoroughly aroused the interest.

A few years ago, in the city of Malden, in a school not far from the site of the first meeting house erected in that region, a discussion arose as to what had become of the old bell that had been mounted near the meeting house on an eminence still known as Bell Rock. It was learned that, strange and unusual as it may be, dissension had arisen in the little church, due rather to the differences and strength of opinions than to the size of the society, and that one roof would not comfortably cover the warring brothers and sisters. Another meeting house having been built, a struggle for possession of the bell began. One party hid it in the well of the near-by parsonage. This was as far as the children could trace it. One morning the boys, quite excited about the matter, suggested a plan to "chip in," as they said, and have the bell dug up. Further inquiries, however, revealed the fact that it had been raised, and placed on a schoolhouse, and when that structure was destroyed years after, the bell was broken up and the pieces distributed about town. Finally one of the class triumphantly brought a piece of the same old bell to school. A trifling affair, truly, but the spontaneous, enthusiastic interest in the early history of the place, indicated by the persistent efforts of the children and by their readiness to contribute their money to secure and preserve an old relic, is no trifle.

There are, however, serious difficulties operating against the teaching of this important subject. The teacher who is without family ties in the place, or other than a professional association with it, is quite apt to lack not only a knowledge of its past, but



also an interest in it. But assuming a willingness to do this work, she looks over the course of study and her program to find a place for it,—possibly to see what she can omit. Can we blame her if the latter is the stronger motive? Consider, there are but five hours in a school day,—the child's day, not the teacher's—and in them she must teach, somehow and at some time, reading, writing, arithmetic, bookkeeping, spelling, geography, grammar and language, drawing and painting, music, sewing, science, or nature studies, physiology, with special lessons on narcotics and stimulants, study of selected authors and their representative works, manners and morals, besides keeping all the school machinery running smoothly and properly. There are many other things, almost "too numerous to mention," not laid down in the course of study. She must prepare special exercises for the sessions preceding public holidays, regularly inspect, count, and repair books, keep registers and pupils' records, make frequent reports to parents and to school officials, etc. In the multiplicity of subjects crowded into the school, something is sure to be squeezed. It will be that of which the teacher has the least knowledge to begin with, and in which the requirements and the supervision are least exacting. Hence the neglect of local history.

Teachers are provided with nothing but an incomplete, ill-arranged list of topics, and are wholly without desk reference books.

But in spite of difficulties, it is possible to accomplish much. Local history does not call for great teaching ability. Given a little acquaintance on the part of the children with the library method of study, a correct outline, and an atmosphere of freedom and enjoyment in the room, and the enthusiasm of the children will give the teacher an hour's pleasure as often as she will take up the subject.

As to materials, the available sources of information are Frothingham's "History of Charlestown" and Drake's "History of Middlesex County." There is an excellent history, also, of this city included in "Somerville Past and Present," written by our historian, Mr. Charles D. Elliot. If that part of



the book could be separated and have added to it condensed sketches from other portions of the work, it would be of great value in the schools. "Past and Present" is too expensive for very general use, and contains much that is not usable. A few copies of this work will, however, appear in each class, furnished by pupils, and are the chief reliance. There is an abridged edition of Drake's "History of Middlesex County" which, if placed upon the teachers' desks, would be of great service.

The public library contains some historical addresses suited to our purposes. Among them is that of ex-Mayor William H. Furber, July 4, 1876, treating of original territory included in Charlestown, purchase of Somerville territory from the Indians, hills and their fortifications, seizure of powder from the old mill, separation from Charlestown, growth, street railways, Somerville in the Civil War, and adoption of the city charter. Another by Mr. John S. Hayes includes first explorers, visit of John Smith and of Miles Standish, Winthrop's coming, division of land, siege of Boston, Burgoyne's troops on Prospect Hill, Paul Revere's ride, first school and first schoolhouse.

"Historic Heights and Points" gives a brief sketch of the fortifications and their importance.

Somerville's history is worthy of study *per se*. The life of the city has been continuous and progressive, and the children who graduate from our schools should have a knowledge sufficiently comprehensive and orderly to enable them to trace her history from the time the land was inhabited by Indians to the present.

Some such outline as the following will illustrate the orderly treatment of matter. Much of Somerville's history has been determined, or, at least, influenced by her topography, and so it is well to begin with that. Then will follow the aboriginal life, the Indian tribes, and also:—

Web Cowit and Squaw Sachem.

First visits by white men.

First settlers.

Coming of Winthrop; Ten Hills Farm.

Title from the Indians.



- Division of land.
- The stinted commons.
- Rangeways.
- Early roads.
- Life in the colonial period.
- Somerville's connection with the Revolution, including:—
  - Capture of powder from the old mill.
    - (Legend of the mill.)
  - Paul Revere's ride.
  - Battle of Lexington and Concord.
    - (Route through Somerville.)
    - (Fighting on Somerville soil.)
  - Battle of Bunker Hill.
  - Siege of Boston.
    - (General plan of fortification.)
    - (Somerville's fortifications.)
    - (Memorial battery on Central Hill.)
    - (Raising of first flag of Continental army.)
    - (Quartering of Burgoyne's captured troops.)
    - (Residences of generals, and other houses of note.)
  - Growth of this portion of Charlestown:
    - Prominent persons.
    - Industrial and commercial life.
      - (Middlesex Canal.)
      - (Railroads, steam and street.)
      - (Manufacturing enterprises.)
  - Separation from Charlestown.
    - Reasons.
    - Date.
    - Name and why selected.
    - Somerville in the Civil War.
  - Change from town government to city.
    - Date, charters, seal.
    - Mayors and a few other prominent officials.



name it bears, noting the traits and events that prove him worthy the honor. Sub-divisions of some of these topics would, of course, be made as events require, my effort being directed to an orderly arrangement with topics broad enough to include all the knowledge that may be gained, with a place for every fact. The arrangement is, in the main, necessarily chronological, excepting that under such topics as education or religious life, we should bring together in order all the facts, from earliest to present times; or, again, if we are studying the business life of the city, we should go back to first conditions and follow events, searching for the causes and influences which have affected its growth and development.

Under "Charter," there should be a study of our city government, the departments, the duties and powers of each, and methods of transacting business, elections, etc.

The schools should be provided with a standard text-book of local history, but others more complete should be accessible to the children, not a single copy or two, but in sufficient number to meet the demands of many pupils. Much material contained in souvenir editions of our papers and in souvenir books and pamphlets that cannot be bought for the schools because of the advertising in them can be brought by pupils from their homes, and used by them as their own property. The information gained will be useful in later years, so many of our pupils are making histories for themselves, in which they write brief statements of facts, references to sources of information, illustrated by clippings from papers and souvenir books, small pictures of historic spots and of prominent men.

Quite a demand has been made of late by the children for photographs after the plan of the Perry pictures and the Brown pictures, but of Somerville subjects, and a proposition is under consideration to print large quantities of them to sell at a very low cost. The camera craze is being turned to good use, and interest in history thereby increased.

Collections and exhibits of relics borrowed for the occasion also add to the interest. The reading of poems, such as Mr. Foss's "Raising of the Flag on Prospect Hill," and the narration,



orally or with the pen, of the stories and legends of the past, are not only profitable, but sources of much pleasure.

Excursions in the hours after school and on holidays, walks, bicycle rides, and the customary annual sleighrides may be made doubly beneficial by directing them to historic shrines.

The topical method of study and recitation should of course be used, as has been indicated already, but there should be no regularity in calling upon pupils to recite in this particular subject. All such efforts should be entirely voluntary. The assignment of a topic should be considered a compliment, to recite a privilege. I would keep no marks and have no penalties. However much we may believe in tasks in other subjects, I would banish all suggestions of them in connection with local history. It should be a work of love, and the class exercise should be characterized by the utmost freedom and enthusiasm.

This society does well to interest itself in the promotion of this study. We must begin early if we would successfully cope with the commercial spirit, the selfishness that would destroy old landmarks, if we would preserve the relics and documents of the past. But on this latter point another society is earlier in the field. The Massachusetts Historical Society recently sent to the State Board of Education a request that an effort be made to interest the school children in the preservation of old documents supposed to be lying about in attics and other repositories of rubbish. The secretary of the board therefore prepared a circular, to be sent to the various towns and cities, requesting children to collect such material and to place it in the custody of that society for preservation and use when required.

The teaching of Somerville history, the record of its life, should beget in the minds of her young people a respect and pride for her past and her present success. It should at least diminish that longing for change to some other place,—no matter where,—so common with them, and teach a devotion to the city and its institutions, an attachment to even its soil, which shall hold through life. Southey says, "Whatever strengthens our local attachments is favorable both to individual and national character. Show me the man who cares no more for one place



than another, and I will show you in that same person one who loves nothing but himself. Beware of those who are homeless by choice. You have no hold upon a person whose affections are without a tap-root."

The boys and girls of this section of our country have a proud heritage. It was no mean people who came to this region. No poorhouses, workhouses, or prisons were opened to populate our soil, and to ease the burdens of another country. It was a liberty-loving, high-minded people, jealous of their rights as freemen, who began here to build a state, and Mrs. Hemans's words,

"Ay, call it holy ground,  
The soil where first they trod,"

may well be applied to Somerville.

Lord Macaulay says, "A people who take no pride in the achievements of remote ancestors will never achieve anything worthy to be remembered with pride by remote descendants."

In this intelligent pride of our young people there is for us the strongest possible guaranty of good government, and of municipal success and prosperity in the years to come.

The public statutes require the teaching of the history of the country and of lessons of patriotism, but it is left for the people of this city to see to it that our schools teach *her* history, and implant loyal devotion to her interests.

---

## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHIN THE PENINSULA REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

In giving our brief sketch of Mr. Sweetser, we are not able to state precisely when his term of service ended as schoolmaster. January 20, 1755, he was chosen town clerk till the March meeting. In May, 1761, and perhaps earlier, he was serving in that capacity permanently. He held this office until his death, which occurred suddenly January 15, 1778. His school labors, like those of Mr. Harris, may have ended with the disastrous events



of 1775. An obituary notice of him may be found in the Boston Gazette, under date of his death. Seth Sweetser, Jr., born February 5, 1704, was of the fourth generation from the original settler of the same name, who came to this country from Tring, Hertfordshire, Eng. He graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1722, and, with the exception of the year 1750-'51, was schoolmaster in his native town from July, 1724, for fully fifty years thereafter. He was held in high esteem by his fellow-citizens, and served on many important committees prior to and during the first years of the Revolution. The name of his mother was Sarah Clark. He married Hannah Bradish, who is said to have died in 1800, at the advanced age of ninety-four. They had thirteen children, of whom Henry Phillips Sweetser was prominent in Charlestown affairs for many years. This was the father of Colonel John Sweetser, styled architect by Wyman, who built for John Olin, Jr., in the early years of the last century, the house at the top of Winter Hill, once occupied by Edward Everett, and for many years owned by John S. Edgerly. Later, as most people know, it was extensively repaired by Mr. Hittenger, its next owner, who left its style of architecture as we now see it.

Another teacher of this period was Robert Calley, but we are at a loss just when to place him. He may have acted as substitute or assistant for Mr. Sweetser during the last years of that gentleman's career. We are indebted to Wyman for our account of him. He was the son of Robert and Lydia (Stimpson) Calley, and was born in Charlestown June 4, 1726. He was twice married, and the father of six children, most of whom died in infancy. He was on the tax list from 1748 to 1763, and his widow in 1771 was No. 44 on a list of valuations. His mother was the sister of Rev. Joseph Stimpson, a former teacher of Charlestown, mentioned in an earlier article of this series, and the cousin of Seth Sweetser. The most interesting thing about this Robert Calley is that he left a manuscript diary in eight volumes. Wyman made an extract of the genealogical material therein contained, and this little book is to be seen in the library of the Massachusetts Genealogical Society, Somerset street, Boston. If the origi-



nal manuscripts are in existence, no doubt they throw much light on the schools at this time. In his abstract the compiler says: "There was evidently a large recess in the duties of Mr. Calley as schoolmaster, and that may account for his occasional neglect of orthography; that detracts, however, but little from the merits of his work. He was otherwise apparently a cabinet-maker."

Wyman's invaluable work also mentions a John Hills, teacher, son of Thomas Hills, of Malden; graduate of Harvard in 1772; married Elizabeth Kettell in 1774; and died January, 1787, leaving four daughters. Perhaps he did not teach in Charlestown, for I find no mention of him on the town records.

May 5, 1777, the town voted "to fix up the block house for a schoolhouse." If there was no building suitable for housing the school after the battle of Bunker Hill, the query rises, what was done with it during these two years? By the next May (1778) the town had so recovered from the shock of war that £140 was appropriated for schools, and the annual sums voted for 1779 and 1780 were £500 and £400, respectively. In December of the last-named year—how impossible is it for us to cope with these figures!—the books show that £6,100 were apportioned among the schools, £3,651 19s. to the one within, and the balance to the three beyond the peninsula! This estimate, of course, is in the inflated currency of the period. The salary of Timothy Trumbull, who was the teacher that year, is put down as £1,300. To get some idea of values, we read that Peter Tufts, in 1781, for twenty days spent for the town as an assessor, was voted £403 2s. The next year, for eighteen days of similar service, he received £4 16s.

From time to time the town clerk serves up for us items of repairs, as, February 5, 1781, to John Turner, £30 for work at the schoolhouse. October 17, 1782, the town warrant calls for a new school building, but it does not seem to materialize. Instead, John Edmands is hired to work on the old house, and gets his pay February 3, 1783. Later that month it is proposed to remove the meeting-house from the hill and set it somewhere for a school building. Isaac Mallet, Peter Tufts, Timothy Tufts,



David Wood, Jr., and Eliphalet Newell are made a committee to select a site, and it is decided "where the old schoolhouse stood is the most suitable place to put the present Meeting-house on." It is voted to move it. September 1, 1783, Mr. Mallet and Mr. Hays are a committee to see what repairs are necessary for the schoolhouse. The next January Deacon Frothingham receives thirty-six shillings for building the school chimney. October 25, 1784, the selectmen are given power to cut off from the present schoolhouse what is an encroachment on the street, and make of it an engine house, also to fix the other part for a new schoolhouse as soon as possible; and November 1 John Hay and Henry P. Sweetser are appointed to fix the old meeting-house for a school.

"Voted, 6 March, 1786, to have a grammar (Latin) school-master in this town." (Query: Had there been no school of this rank since the days of Seth Sweetser?) Mr. H. P. Sweetser was added to the committee to see about a grammar master.

June 19, 1786. "It is voted to sell the old schoolhouse, which is not worth repairing, and build a new one, and to raise £100 to build it. Mr. Harris, Samuel Swan, Jr., and H. P. Sweetser, are a committee to build the school, and sell the old one to Captain Calder, and to set the school on Town Hill." July 17 this committee is enjoined to go about their work immediately. Captain Calder is to have the old house for £10, lawful money, as it now stands, "and two or three days to give his answer." August 7 it is voted to reconsider the former vote in regard to building a new schoolhouse, and give directions to the committee to put the old one in repair. As this committee desired to be excused, David Wood, Jr., Captain Cordis, and Samuel Henley, Esq., were chosen in their places. These are all the items I find on the subject, and I must confess my mind is in some doubt as to what were the exact school accommodations on the peninsula after the Revolution.

Timothy Trumbull was town clerk and schoolmaster, 1780-'82. The account of him in Wyman would seem to need verification. He was the son of James and Phebe (Johnson) Trumbull, and was born in 1751. At one time he was living in



Andover, where he married (1778) Frances, daughter of Joseph Phipps. Wyman makes brief mention of three children, but does not allude to his son John, of Norwich, whom I find referred to on the selectmen's books. Evidently Mr. Trumbull fell ill in 1782, when his family was not with him, for Jonathan Bradshaw received out of the rent for the school lot £3 8s. 7d. for boarding him four weeks and four days. In their anxiety, the selectmen sent a messenger, Mr. Wyeth, to Norwich to confer with the son about boarding his father "for the ensuing winter. As no convenient place amongst us can be found, if you will take him and provide, the selectmen will see to it that you are paid." But the worthy town fathers were relieved of their responsibility in a different way, for November 4, 1782, we read: "It is voted to pay Frances Trumbull £15 for her late husband, Timothy Trumbull, keeping school; and the next February there is a balance of a few more pounds to her account." Administration on Mr. Trumbull's estate was granted D. Wood November 7, 1783, and the inventory amounted to £140.

Another entry showing the philanthropic spirit of the times is not entirely foreign to this paper. "Voted, November 2, 1789, that Ruth Jones be put to school to some person who will prepare her for a schoolmistress at as cheap rate as can be!"

The next teacher was Samuel Holbrook, who also succeeded to the worthy position of town clerk. Like his predecessors, he received the annual compensation of £10 for this office. He must have served in both capacities for a period of nearly five years, but Wyman omits all mention of him. We have consulted the printed genealogy of the Holbrook family, but are unable to place him. His salary of £100 as schoolmaster was soon increased to £110. The town seems to have been behindhand in paying him for his services, but July 29, 1786, he received an order from the town treasurer for the balance due him to the twenty-fifth, being an amount nearly equal to two years' salary. March 5, 1787, Mr. Holbrook retires as town clerk, and is given a vote of thanks. The next May we find Samuel Payson serving as town clerk and schoolmaster, with the usual compensation for both. His term of office extended well into the next decade.



The annual appropriations, over and above the school funds, for all expenses, both within and without the Neck, gradually increased from £100 in 1781 to £185 in 1786. After that, until 1790, the amount fell off to £150. About this time the books show that the town had some difficulty in meeting its bills, and, like other communities, was engaged in various lottery schemes for some years. In 1790, and long before, the warrant for town meeting names the schoolhouse within the Neck as the voting place.

As for the school fund during all the years which we have been considering, it seems well to close with the following extracts:—

“July 27, 1762. Agreed that Peter Tufts, Jr., improve the school lot belonging to this town now in his possession, for the same rent as before, viz., £3 4s., l. m., per annum for six years.”

“February 6, 1769. Voted that the school lot be set up at vendue. February 27 it was leased out to the highest bidder, who proved to be Daniel Cutter, of Medford, for five years, at £7 17s. 4d. per annum.”

“February 14, 1774. Mr. Peter Tufts, Jr., hires the town farm at Stoneham for seven years.”

“March 7, 1783. Jack Symmes is allowed to have the school lot one year for £5 6s. 8d.”

“Voted, March 1, 1784, to send letters to Joseph and Nathan Adams, who now improve the town farms, that they will be let next Monday at 3 P. M. at Mr. Whittemore’s. Finally, agreed with Silas Symons to improve the town farm at Stoneham, lately improved by Captain Adams, for the next five years.”

Whether the school lot and the town farm or farms were the same or not, we shall endeavor to show in another chapter that such extracts have a bearing on the important change in school methods adopted by the town of Charlestown soon after 1790.

[To be continued.]



## QUINCY ADAMS VINAL

By Charles D. Elliot

Quincy Adams Vinal, who was a member of the Somerville Historical Society, and one of the most prominent citizens of Somerville, was born here on September 23, 1826, in the house which formerly stood on or near the site of Hotel Warren. He was son of Deacon Robert Vinal, formerly of Scituate, and Lydia (Stone) Vinal. His father came to Somerville, then Charlestown, in 1824; he was one of a family of five sons and six daughters; he was educated in the old "Milk Row" primary school, then standing within the limits of the present cemetery, in the old Medford-street school, and in the Hopkins Classical school of Cambridge, then one of the foremost preparatory schools for Harvard College.

After leaving school, he was employed in his father's grain store in Boston until 1848, when he became associated with his brother, Robert A. Vinal, in the same business on Lewis' wharf, which partnership lasted for fifteen years, or until the retirement of his brother, he continuing in the grain trade until 1876, when he also retired. Since then, however, he has been actively engaged in important business enterprises, holding many offices of trust.

He was the first president of the Somerville National Bank, holding the office until 1894; director in the Cambridge Gas Light Company for several years, and its president from April, 1897, until his death. He was also for some time director in the Charlestown Gas Company. He was a charter member of the Boston Chamber of Commerce, and, until its settlement, trustee of the estate of the late Charles Tufts, the founder of Tufts College; he was also a trustee of other estates.

His sterling integrity was recognized by his fellow-citizens, and for many years he held important public offices in the town and city, being at various times member of the board of assessors, committee on public library, trustee of the Somerville hospital, and member of the fire department.

He was a member of the Legislature in 1873, 1881, and 1882, of the common council in 1875 and 1876, and alderman in 1883,



holding membership in the park, highway, and other important committees of the city government.

On October 26, 1853, Mr. Vinal was married to Miss Augusta Smith Peirce, daughter of John and Sarah Peirce, of Chelsea, now Revere, and great-granddaughter of Captain John Parker, one of the heroes of the battle of Lexington, and grandfather of Rev. Theodore Parker. Two memorials of Captain Parker have been preserved in the Massachusetts state house, one, the first firearm captured in the Revolution, the other, the gun carried by Captain Parker at the battle of Lexington.

On the fiftieth anniversary of their marriage, October 26, 1903, the golden wedding of Mr. and Mrs. Vinal was celebrated at their home on Aldersey street, upon which occasion they received the congratulations and good wishes of many hundred friends and guests.

Mr. Vinal died on July 14, 1904, at the age of seventy-seven years. A widow and seven daughters survive him, viz.: Miss Anna Parker Vinal, a member of this society, Miss Mary Lowell Vinal, Miss Martha Adams Vinal, Miss Josephine Vinal, Mrs. Sarah A. (Vinal) Keene, Miss Leonora Vinal, and Miss Leslie T. Vinal.

Mr. Vinal in religion was a Unitarian, and a member of the First Unitarian Society. In politics he was a Republican. He was a man of strong convictions and unimpeachable character; successful in his business career and as a public official. He loved his native town and city, and his memory was stored with reminiscences of its history. An interesting paper by him recalling events of former times, and entitled "Neighborhood Sketches," was read on January 8, 1903, before this society. Mr. Vinal was amiable in his relations with others, and a man with innumerable friends, and in whom friends could place the most implicit confidence. He was one of the few men who were born and lived their entire lives in our city. As a prominent citizen of Somerville, whom here we shall meet no more, his memory will be recalled with feelings of the greatest respect.

October 3, 1904.



# Somerville Historical Society

Season of 1904-1905

---

**October 3**—Business Meeting.

**\*November 2**—From the Stage Coach to the Parlor Car; or,  
The Romance of the Railroad in Massachusetts.  
CHARLES E. MANN, Malden.

**November 16**—Old Somerville and “Charlestown End.”  
GEORGE Y. WELLINGTON,  
President Arlington Historical Society.

**December 5**—Business Meeting.

**\*December 7**—Incidents in a Long Life in the Public Service.  
JAIRUS MANN.

**December 21**—The Beginnings of the Boston and Lowell  
Railroad.  
FRANK E. MERRILL.

**\*January 4**—An Evening with  
EDWIN DAY SIBLEY.

**January 18**—Concerning Some Neighboring Historical Societies.  
DAVID H. BROWN,  
President Medford Historical Society.  
EUGENE TAPPAN,  
Secretary Sharon Historical Society.

**\*February 1**—Neighborhood Sketch.—In and About Union  
Square, No. 2.  
CHARLES D. ELLIOT.

**February 6**—Business Meeting.

**February 15**—Boston in the Civil War—Chiefly from a Naval  
View Point.

**\*March 1**—The Flora of Somerville.  
LOUISE A. VINAL.

**March 15**—Some Peculiarities of Our Ancestors.  
D. P. COREY,  
President Malden Historical Society.

**April 3**—Annual Meeting.

\*Light refreshments will be served.



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1905

Vol. III

No. 4



## CONTENTS

---

SAMUEL TUFTS HOUSE	Frontispiece
GREGORY STONE AND SOME OF HIS DESCEND- ANTS	54
THE SCHOOLS OF CHARLESTOWN BEYOND THE NECK, with frontispiece (continued)	Frank Mariner Hawes 51
INDEX	

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

## Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street,  
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid

Single copies, 25 cents

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee

---

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER FOSS, Chairman

JOHN R. AYER, *ex officio* SARAH A. STONE

FRANK M. HAWES





SAMUEL TUFTS HOUSE.      GEN. GREENE'S HEADQUARTERS.  
See page 97



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. III.

JANUARY, 1905

No. 4

---

## GREGORY STONE AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

By Sara A. Stone

Gregory Stone, and Simon, his elder brother, came to this country with their families from England in 1635. Their English ancestry has been traced with probable accuracy back to one Symond Stone, who lived in Much Bromley, Essex County. His will was probated in 1510, and is now in possession of the British Museum. Simon and Gregory were great-great-grandsons of this Symond, and the record of their baptisms has been found in the church register of Much Bromley, February 9, 1585-6, and April 19, 1592, respectively. The marriage of Simon to Joan Clark in 1616 is also there; but the marriage of Gregory to Margaret Garrad has been found in the parish register at Nayland, Suffolk County. There are also records of the birth of four children, and the burial of the mother and youngest within two days of each other.

Gregory married for his second wife the widow Lydia Cooper, who already had two children by her former husband. The births of three more children are recorded at Nayland. With this family of eight children, the oldest seventeen, the youngest three years, he crossed the water. Paige, in his History of Cambridge, thinks it probable that he came in the ship *Defence*, from London, with the Rev. Thomas Shepherd, and some others. This company, fleeing religious intolerance at home, embarked in the early days of July, 1635, in a ship having "a bottom too decayed and feeble indeed for such a voyage, so that a perilous leak endangered her safety on the way hither."

Simon Stone came with his family on the ship *Increase*, also from London, and settled in Watertown, where he and his descendants for several generations took a prominent part in the affairs of the locality. He was a grantee of eight lots, and later was one of the largest land owners in the town. A considerable



part of the land now occupied by Mt. Auburn and Cambridge cemeteries once belonged to him. According to tradition it was he who built the old-fashioned house of colonial style, that, with the extensive buildings connected with it, served six generations of his descendants for two hundred years, till it was destroyed by fire.

In the beginning, Watertown included a tract which now is divided into Waltham, Weston, and the largest part of Lincoln, and that part of Cambridge lying east of Mt. Auburn Cemetery, between Fresh Pond and Charles River, though these tracts were probably not inhabited, and even Watertown proper being but sparsely sprinkled with houses. Charlestown had already been settled, and Cambridge, then called "Newe Towne," seems to have been "designed merely as a fortified place, very small in extent, and apparently without definite bounds." The dividing line between Charlestown and Cambridge was established in 1632-3, and was substantially the same as that which now divides Cambridge from Somerville.

A grant by the court in March, 1635-6, agreed that "Newe Towne" bounds "shall run eight miles into the country from their meeting-house." This grant secured to Cambridge, on its northern border, the territory now embraced in Arlington, and the principal part of Lexington. The reason for this extension was that a restless spirit seemed to pervade the inhabitants, due to several causes. Their large herds of cattle demanded more room than was available. There were two clergymen having great influence and large following, one of whom, Mr. Hooker, deemed it wise to withdraw to some place more remote from Boston, leaving Mr. Cotton a clear field in Newe Towne. There were also political rivalries.

This was the state of affairs when the ship *Defence* arrived in October, 1635. Mr. Hooker tried to induce some of this company to go with him to Connecticut, where he proposed to establish a settlement, and did succeed in doing so. But Gregory Stone decided to remain in Cambridge, probably being only too glad to reach *terra firma*, after the long and arduous voyage. If he had gone on to Connecticut, the lives of many people, his



descendants, would have been different, and this story, perhaps, would not have been written.

It is presumed that he settled first in Watertown, as he had large grants of land there, which he afterward sold. The first incident of note after his arrival must have been the establishment of the "first church gathering" in Newe Towne, destined to become the first parish in Cambridge, now, as then, located in Harvard Square. A quaint historian says the people were probably summoned to the gathering by the roll of a drum, and could be seen coming from all quarters. When the list of the church members was written years later, Gregory Stone and all his family were members in full communion; all his children had been baptized there. It is not known just when he joined, but it must have been in the early days, as he was made a freeman in May, 1636. The conditions of this privilege, which was earnestly desired by every man, were, "to be orthodox members of the church, twenty years old, and worth £200."

As part of the unrest of this time, there was moving to and fro between Watertown and Newe Towne, and Gregory Stone was one of those who moved to Newe Towne in 1637. He bought a house and five acres of land of Roger Harlackenden, Esq. By the boundaries given, this homestead or "homestall," must have been in the neighborhood of the Cambridge Observatory and Botanic Gardens.

By purchase and grants in later years he became a large land-holder. In 1638 he was Representative for Cambridge. In the meantime there was work to do in the laying out of Newe Towne, which, by order of the General Court in 1636, was called Cambridge, and providing for its government. The records are full of these transactions, with the regulations accompanying each.

For example, "Severall lotts granted by the Towne for wood lots unto divers persons, But the land to ly in Comon for ye townes use."

"And the other fide Menotime Bridge, Gregory Stone, 13 acres."

"Gregory Stone hath liberty to fell fome timber on the Comon for his fence against the Comon."



"At a Gen all meeting of the Inhabitants the 8th mo. 1652.

"The Towne do choose mr Richard Champney, Gregory Stone, Tho: Marret, Ri: Jackson, and Gilbert Cracbone to draw up instructions ffor the Townsmen, and present the same to the Towne 4th, 10th. 52. to be allowed or disflowed by a Generall Vote of the Towne then met."

There seems to have been some question "whether or Cow Common were already lawfully stinted," so serious as to require an audience before the magistrate of the county. Gregory Stone was one of a committee which should present "ye true state of ye buisness before them."

Later, there was a fence to be erected on the Watertown line, and he was one of a committee of seven to "confider & determine, the ordering, making & maintaining of that fence."

People on the south side of the river, finding it a long distance to go to church in Cambridge, petitioned from time to time to be set off as a separate precinct. A committee was appointed, of which Gregory Stone was one, "to treat with or Brethren & Neighbors on the south side the River & to issue the matter with them according to the above proposiccon made & agreed by the Towne."

Gregory Stone was by this time called "Deacon" in all the records, and his name appears on nearly every important committee, from that which was appointed to thin out the wood lots, to one commissioned to present before the General Court a protest against the arbitrary government of a Council or Parliament in which they were not represented, this being contrary to the intent of their first patent, as they interpreted it, at the same time avowing their personal loyalty to the King. Here was the first whispering of the spirit which, more than a hundred years later, was heard in full tones in the Declaration of Independence.

At a special session, commencing October 19, 1664,—"The Court being met together and informed that several persons, inhabitants of Cambridge, were at the door and desiring liberty to make known their errand, were called in, and Mr. Edward Jackson, Mr. Richard Jackson, Mr. Edward Oakes, and Deacon Stone, coming before the Court, presented a petition from the



inhabitants of Cambridge which was subscribed by very many hands, in which they testified and declared their good content and satisfaction they took and had in the present government in church and commonwealth, with their resolution to be assisting to and encouraging the same, and humbly desiring all means might be used for the continuance and preservation thereof:—

“To the honoured Generall Court of Massachusetts Colonie. The humble representation of the inhabitants of the towne of Cambridg.

“For as much as we have heard that theire have beene representations made unto his Majesty conserning divisions among us and dissatisfaction about the present government of this colonie; we whose names are under written, the inhabitants and house holders of the towne above mentioned, doe hearby testify our unanimous satisfaction in and adhearing to the present government so long and orderly establisched, and our earnest desire of the continuance theirof and of all the liberties and privileges pertaining theirunto which are contained in the charter granted by King James and King Charles the First of famous memory, under the encouerdgmt and security of which charter we or our fathers ventured over the ocean into this wildenesse through great hazards, charges, and difficulties; and we humbly desire our honored General Court would addresse themselves by humble petition to his Maiesty for his royll favour in the continuance of the present establishment and of all previleges theirof, and that we may not be subjected to the arbitrary power of any who are not chosen by this people according to theire patent. Cambridge the 17th of the 8. 1664.”

Similar petitions were sent in from neighboring towns the next day.

Among the names signed to this petition were those of Gregory Stone and David and Samuel Stone, his sons. By this it would seem that two at least of Gregory Stone's sons had followed their father's footsteps.

In 1647, he had received a grant of 200 acres, more or less, abutting “upon the Heade of the 8 mile line toward Concord.” In this locality many had now settled, and his sons on their mar-



riage became influential members of this community, which was called "The Farms."

Perhaps here might be interposed a brief record of the children of Gregory Stone, other than Samuel, in whom we are chiefly interested.

John, the oldest, settled in that part of Sudbury which is now Framingham, but in the latter part of his life came back to Cambridge, occupying the homestead after the death of his father, in 1672, carrying out a wish expressed in the latter's will. He was deacon of the church at Sudbury, and was employed by the town in civil affairs. He was Representative for Cambridge in 1682 and 1683. He was elected ruling elder of the church at Cambridge in 1682, but held the office for a short time only, as he died the next year. The stone which marks his burial place may be found in the old cemetery at Harvard Square.

Daniel, the second son, was a "Chirurgeon," and resided in Cambridge and Boston.

David, the third, did not hold any important office, but apparently was well known in the precinct of "The Farms," as his son Samuel sometimes signed his name, Samuel Stone, "David's Son."

There were two daughters, Elizabeth, who settled in Ipswich, and Sarah, who married Joseph Merriam and lived at Concord.

John Cooper, the son of Gregory Stone's second wife, by her first husband, became a prominent citizen of Cambridge. He was selectman thirty-eight years, town clerk thirteen years, and deacon of the church twenty-three years.

His sister, Lydia, married David Fiske, and resided part of the time on Linnaean Street, Cambridge, and afterwards at "The Farms," where he was one of the most prominent men. He was a wheelwright, but much employed in public service, especially as a surveyor of lands. He was selectman in 1688, Representative in the critical period of 1689. At "The Farms" he was precinct clerk and assessor; the first subscriber for a meeting-house there, and the first named member of the church.

In tracing the career of Gregory Stone, as found in the



records, one comes upon the same names again and again. Comparison with the list of those who, it was presumed, came in the ship *Defence* at the same time as he, shows that they were fellow-workers in the upbuilding of the infant settlement. In 1647, on the death of one of these, Nathaniel Sparohauke, father of John Cooper's wife, he was appointed appraiser of part of his estate. He was one of the executors of the will of his brother Simon, who died in 1665.

At the beginning of the year 1668 there is recorded an order of the selectmen for the "cattichifing of the youth of the town." Deacon Stone, and Deacon Cheholme were appointed to perform that office for the youth at "The Farms." Two years later a similar order is recorded, with Edward Oakes as his associate. Another item says: "Deacon Stone & Deacon Cooper for those fam. on the west side of the Common, and for Watertown lane, as far towards the town as Samuel Hastings".

At this time he was on a committee for dividing the common lands on the south side of the river in the precinct which I presume is now Brighton; there also seems to have been a tract which for some reason reverted to the town, and a committee was appointed to settle the damages. In nearly all work of this kind, requiring good judgment and impartial decision, he had a part.

Two curious items in the church records show that Deacon Stone was called on to take charge of the arrangements and pay the expenses of certain funerals. They are as follows:—

"March 16, 1668-9. To Deacon Stone by a pair of Shooes and a pound of suger, because the deacon had silver though they cost him 4s 6d had 3s 6d

"February 4, 1670. Payd in silver, by the apoyntment of the committee for the mynister house unto the deputie governor Mr Francis Willoughby, by Deacon Stone and Thomas Chesholm, as appears by his discharge wch Deacon Stone hath, for the dischong of Mr. Mitchell's funerall the sum of 8 pounds, 13 shillings, 6 pence. I say the sum of £8 13s 6d"

Mr. Mitchell had served the parish long and faithfully as its minister.



The last committee upon which Gregory Stone served was one which was to have charge of building a stone fence four feet high, with two gates, on the line between Watertown and Cambridge. There is reason to think that this work was never carried out on the part of the committee.

On November 30, 1672, Gregory Stone died at the age of eighty years. He was "the last survivor" of the original members of the "first church gathering" at Cambridge. He had been its deacon for at least fourteen years, and in all probability for twice that length of time.

Ten days before his death he made his will, expressing in clear and definite terms his wishes as to the disposal of his effects. The will has been printed in the New England Historic-Genealogical Register, volume 8, page 69, and is one of the very few papers left by him which the worms and teeth of time have not devoured, and which lies at the foundation of the genealogy of his race. The opening paragraph is worthy of full quotation:—

"In the name of God-Amen. I, Gregory Stone of Cambridge in New England, being through the Lord's favor of sound judgment and memory, do make and ordeine my last will & Testamt in manner following, viz.: my immortall soul I do freely resigne into the armes and mercyes of God my Maker, Jesus Christ my only redeemer, and to the holy spirit, to carry mee on & lead mee forever, my body to be decently interred at the discretion of my Xian friends."

For some unknown reason, out of the twelve or more known grandchildren, he singled out one, to whom he gave by special bequest "my little cow called mode and my little young colt, or five pounds, provided he live with my wife one year after my decease, & do her faithful service according to his best ability, during which time my wife shall find him his meat, drink, and cloathing, & at the end of the year deliver him the above-named cow and colt." His sons John and Samuel were appointed executors. To his wife's children, John and Lydia Cooper, were given ten pounds each, and Lydia's daughter, whom he called his grandchild, was given two acres of land.



Judging from the inventory, the house he left was a commodious one for the time. The inventory mentions a parlor and hall, with chambers over both, but the contents of all are of miscellaneous description. A few of the items will give some idea of the price of different articles:—

	£	s	d
A tann coatt.....	00	12	00
A gray Jackit .....	00	05	00
A red wastcoatt .....	00	01	06
A man's hoode .....	00	01	06
A payrr of moofe leather gloves .....	00	02	00
A feather bed, bolster, and two pillowes.....	02	13	00
A payrr of sheets .....	00	03	00
Two blankits .....	00	12	00
A coverlit .....	00	16	00
A payrr of Cotton sheets .....	00	15	00
A warming pan .....	00	07	00
A bible .....	00	04	00
pfalme booke .....	00	01	00
Three printed books .....	00	02	00
17 pewter dishes great & small.....	02	00	00
Three pewter pots and a beaker .....	00	09	00
16 spoons .....	00	02	06
Two pewter candlesticks .....	00	03	00
A fowling piece .....	01	00	00
fine table cloth & towolls.....	01	02	00
A table and forms.....	00	07	00
A table and two forms.....	01	04	00
Three bedsteds .....	00	09	00
12 Busholls of Apples.....	00	12	00
beefe tallow, a butter tub and lanthorn.....	00	07	00
A gray mare and colt.....	03	00	00
A young cow.....	03	00	00
Two oxen .....	11	00	00

It would seem by this list that cotton sheets and pewter ware were among the high-priced articles of household furniture, probably because they were imported articles. We wonder what kind



of a bedstead could be worth only three shillings. It will be noted that forms are mentioned instead of chairs. Bed furnishings and wearing apparel were abundant, but held at a low valuation.

In the old cemetery at Harvard Square, a foot stone, marked G. S., shows the last resting place of Gregory Stone. A few years ago a descendant erected a granite monument near it, with suitable inscription.

#### Deacon Samuel Stone

Samuel, the only son of Gregory Stone by his second wife, was baptized on February 4, 1630, in the church at Nayland, Suffolk County, England. He was five years old when the family came to this country. His education must have been obtained in the schools of the time. Possibly he went to the "faire Grammer School," the first one established in the settlement, taught by Elijah Corlet, a school which prepared students for Harvard College, and which was situated near the spreading chestnut tree, celebrated in Longfellow's poem.

He was married on June 7, 1655, to Sarah Stearns, of Watertown, and located at "The Farms." He was made freeman in 1657. He became a prosperous farmer and land-holder, and his name frequently appears on the records for various services.

For the first and almost the only time the name of Stone is found among those fined for "felling and stroying timb on ye comon lands," in the record of a meeting of the selectmen, held in 1660. This was not an unusual misdemeanor in those days.

In 1663-4-7 he was appointed surveyor of highways. In 1669 he was one of a committee to run the bounds between Concord and Cambridge. In 1673 he was appointed constable, an office somewhat similar to that of townsmen or selectmen. Later he was commissioned "to looke after the Common fencis for the farmes neere Concord."

Upon complaint made by him and Joseph Merriam, his brother-in-law, "of the low and pore Condilhon of John Johnson, the selectmen doe requeft Samuell Stone and Joseph Merriam to take care for his fulpy for his present nefefitye, and to be fupplyed



out of the town rate from the Constable Hack Stones, not exceeding fourty shillings untill further order be taken."

In 1681 he was appointed selectman, and also in 1688 and 1692; the selectmen then performed the duty of assessors, until 1697, except in the year 1694. He was also appointed on a committee to make a "rate for the ministry" in 1683 and 1691, and was chosen Commissioner in 1693 and 1695.

The following quotation from a report of a committee appointed to lay out the bounds of a meadow of eighty acres, more or less, not far from the Concord bounds, is interesting from the curious spelling: "this is by us marked Rounde that medow where it is next the Comon with this mark <sup>M</sup> with A markin oyrn on that side of many trees nex the medow, the proprietors being with us and consenting to what we have done.

"famuell stone, fenr,  
"david fifke, fenr,  
"Mathew bredge, fenr."

He served on a committee which was appointed to "devid the lands conteyned betwixt oburne Concord and our head line," and "alsoe to leave Convenient high ways of two rod wide between the divisons or Squadrents where need requires for a high way."

An order of the Court establishing what was called a "single rate" was passed in November, 1646, the rate to be one penny for every twenty shillings estate. In the list of persons and estates taken in August, 1688, the name of Samuel Stone, Sr., is given as paying the highest tax, showing that he was a man of large landed property. In these days of high rates of taxation the sum of 11s 9d seems absurdly small, however.

Meanwhile the inhabitants of "The Farms," finding it difficult to perform their religious duties, which no "right New England man" thought of shirking, living, as some of them did, ten miles from the meeting-house, petitioned to be set off as a separate precinct. Cambridge was so much opposed that the petition was not granted; nor was a second appeal two years later. But "The Farmers," feeling the justice of their cause, persevered, and in 1691 were given permission to establish a church, though they remained a part of Cambridge in civil affairs until 1713.



Samuel Stone was prominent in this new venture, being one of the signers of the petition to the General Court, on the committee to engage the preacher, and one of the first deacons. The funds for building the meeting-house were raised by subscription, and the paper is the oldest upon the records, and is prized accordingly, bearing, as it does, the names of the principal inhabitants of the precinct at a critical time in its history. It is needless to say that Samuel Stone's name is among the foremost, people in those days giving according to their means. The same is true of the tax for the payment of the minister's salary. The next year a piece of land was bought for the "benefit of the ministry," and it was paid for by the same means.

It was the custom of the time to invite the magistrates to be present at such important occasions as the organization of a new church. The event at "The Farms" was no exception, and combined the ordination of the minister with the signing of the covenant by the members. Judge Sewall was one of the invited guests, and in his journal, after a description of the exercises, adds, "Mr. Stone and Mr. Fiske thanked me for my assistance there." David Fiske was chosen clerk, and Samuel Stone deacon. The two were the first to sign the covenant, being among the ten men dismissed from churches in Cambridge, Watertown, Woburn, and Concord to enter into the work. The names of a son of each are also found in the list, and their wives were admitted later. Deacon Stone had been a member of the church at Cambridge, and all his children had been baptized there.

The minister chosen served less than a year, and a meeting was called to consider a new supply. The Rev. John Hancock was their choice, and the senior deacon and the clerk were appointed "to treat with him."

While the affairs of the church were proceeding so satisfactorily, civil affairs were also progressing. The settlement had come to be called "Cambridge Farms" and in the year 1694, by the order of the Treasurer of the Province, a board of assessors was chosen to perform the duties which had previously been attended to by the selectmen. Samuel Stone was one of these, and was appointed again in 1695 and 1697.



Early in the new century the question of the bounds between Cambridge and Watertown seems not to have been settled, or, at least, the marks and monuments needing to be renewed, a committee was appointed in each town to attend to the matter. Samuel Stone was one of the committee from Cambridge.

At a town meeting held in April, 1711, the people voted to buy a piece of land near the meeting-house for a public common, the same to be paid for by subscription. The names of several Stones appear on this list.

Samuel Stone was twice married; his first wife died in 1700, and his second survived him thirteen years. He died at the age of eighty-five, September 27, 1715. "In ye old burying ground" in Lexington, on the circular drive at the southern end, is a row of twelve slate stones, bearing the name of Stone. The first is that of Samuel Stone, Sr., the second that of his first wife.

#### Samuel Stone, West

Samuel Stone, the oldest son of Deacon Samuel Stone, was born at Cambridge Farms October 1, 1656. On account of duplicate names in the family, to avoid confusion, he was designated Samuel Stone, West, to distinguish him from his cousin, David Stone's son, who was called Samuel Stone, East.

He married Dorcas Jones, of Concord, June 12, 1679. He probably resided in what is now Lincoln, somewhat nearer the church at Concord than the one at Cambridge, for the births of all his children are recorded there. He was taxed, however, in Cambridge, as his name is on the tax list of 1688. He was freeman in 1682. He took a prominent part in the establishment of the church at "The Farms" in 1691 and later, being one of the signers of the first covenant, as has been related. In 1698 his wife was admitted to the church from Concord, and from that time their interests seem to have been wholly in the town of Lexington, as it was called by order of the Court, in 1713.

According to an (unofficial) estimate of the population, it had increased from forty-five to over 500 in the sixty years between 1655 and 1715, so that it is not remarkable that he should be interested in and take a prominent part in the affairs of the town which had grown with his growth.



A grandchild of one of the early settlers in Lexington says: "The old patriarch has often related with tears in his eyes the poverty and destitution experienced, the hardships borne, and the trials endured by the first inhabitants of the place. Their dwellings were small and rude—the same room serving the various purposes of kitchen and parlor, dining-room and bedroom, store-house and workshop. Their furniture was of the most primitive kind; blocks or forms made of split logs furnished seats, wooden spoons, made with a knife, enabled them to eat their bread and milk, or bean porridge, out of rude bowls or troughs, cut with an axe from blocks of wood." The terror from Indians must have been even worse. It is related that, after a massacre by the Indians at Framingham, during King Philip's War, a little girl was taken away to Canada, but was afterward rescued and brought back. The tales she could picture to her daughter, who figures in this narrative later on, can best be left to the imagination.

On the death of Samuel Stone's father, Deacon Stone, in 1715, he was appointed deacon to fill the vacancy. He also succeeded his father in the homestead. He was selectman in 1714, 1715, and 1723. In 1735 there were twenty-five slaves in town, in most cases kept as house servants. It is said that Deacon Stone had one. His long life of eighty-seven years was brought to a close June 17, 1743. In the row of slate stones in "ye Old Burying Ground," his is the eleventh, or the second from the further end; and that of his wife, who died three years later, has been placed beside it. This couple lived together sixty-four years.



## THE SCHOOLS OF CHARLESTOWN BEYOND THE NECK—REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD

Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

Our account of the "school" beyond Charlestown Neck has been brought down to 1751. The object of this paper will be to continue its history to 1793.

After the bounds of Medford were definitely established, there were left three school districts, which we, not the records, have chosen to call the Milk Row, the Alewife Brook, and the Gardner Row. The first of these embraced nearly the whole of what is now Somerville; the second may be said to have extended from the Old Powder House well up into Arlington; the third lay wholly in that town and along by the Mystic ponds. As we have indicated, the town books afford very meagre information, and we are forced to content ourselves, for the most part, with a list of the local committee for each year, and the sums of money appropriated.

From 1754 to 1765, a period of eleven years, the amount voted in town meeting for these outside districts was £180, or £24, l. m. In the last-mentioned year a readjustment of the taxes increased this appropriation to £34, l. m., and it remained at this sum until 1775. As was stated in our last chapter, no money seems to have been raised by taxation for school purposes that year. Evidently the schools on the peninsula were both closed for a time, but from a perusal of the selectmen's books we conclude that the three schools which we are considering were continued without any marked interruption, for the local committee ceased not to disburse sums received from the town treasurer, sums varying, to be sure, from year to year, but which by 1781 had returned somewhat to the old basis of things. From that time the appropriation slowly increased, until the sum for outside educational purposes amounted in 1792 to £80.

The management of all the schools was nominally in the hands of the selectmen, but for many years previous to 1754 a local committee was annually appointed, to attend to all matters



pertaining to these outside schools, such as furnishing wood for the winter fire, making repairs, hiring and paying the teachers.

For nineteen years, from 1752 to 1770, inclusive, the local committeeman for Milk Row was Samuel Kent, whose father, Joseph Kent, we have seen, held a similar position for some years before that. During this long period he disbursed, on an average, less than £12 yearly of the town's money for this school. Compared with the present outlay in the same district, this seems a mere trifle, but perhaps this man, for his faithfulness to public duties, is deserving of an enduring monument, such as the naming of a school building for himself and his family, full as much as some of our more modern worthies who have been thus honored.

The Kent family was long identified with the history of Charlestown. The grandfather of Samuel came here from Dedham in 1653, and left a good estate to his children. Ebenezer, a distant cousin of Samuel, was the ancestor of Hon. William H. Kent, one of the mayors of Charlestown. Joseph Kent died May 30, 1753, in his seventy-ninth year, and was the father of nine children. In his will there is mention of seventy-four acres at Winter Hill, bounded, east, by a rangeway; west, by Peter Tufts; etc. Besides several smaller parcels, he left to his son Samuel sixteen acres, bought of N. Hayward, near Winter Hill, and the use of twelve acres of wood. He bequeathed his negro Peggy to his daughter Mehitabel; Venus to his daughter Rebecca; Jenny to his son Benjamin; and Violet to his son Stephen. The will of his widow, probated 1762, mentions her negro girl Jane.

Samuel, the fifth child, born July 18, 1714, lived and died probably on what is now Somerville avenue. The family home-stead is still standing above the Middlesex Bleachery, near Kent street. Mr. Kent was a blacksmith, and, like his father, held various town offices, including that of selectman. Wyman's invaluable work, to which we are indebted for much of our information, is wrong when it says that Mr. Kent was schoolmaster outside the Neck May 2, 1768. On that date the record merely states that he received an order for his proportion of the money for the said school. Probably he served in his capacity as com-



mitteeman until his death. His estate was administered by the widow, 1771. In the inventory, among other items, was a parcel of forty acres, bounded, south, by a range; east, by W. Tufts; north, by D. Wood; west, by Peter Tufts, John Pigeon, etc. With the house and shop went seven and one-half acres, bounded by the road on the northeast, and southwest by land of Samuel Tufts.

November 27, 1740, Samuel Kent married into a remarkable family, remarkable as far as Somerville history is concerned, among whose numerous descendants are many of the present day to rise up and call them blessed. Of the children of Joseph<sup>3</sup> (Joseph<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>1</sup>) Adams, of Cambridge, Rebecca married Samuel Kent; Anne became the wife of Peter Tufts, Jr.; and Mary married Nathan Tufts, his brother. Two sons of Joseph Adams, through their children, figure in this history,—Thomas<sup>4</sup> Adams being the father of Hannah, the wife of Walter Russell, to whom reference will be made in our next paper; and Joseph<sup>4</sup> Adams (styled deacon), whose children contrive to confuse us still further with their marriages, for Anna became the wife of Timothy Tufts, another brother of Peter, Jr., and Hannah married Peter Tufts, the third; Nathan<sup>5</sup> Adams took to wife Rebecca, the daughter of Peter, Jr., and Joseph<sup>5</sup> Adams (styled major) married, for his first wife, Lucy, the daughter of our Samuel Kent. Samuel and Rebecca (Adams) Kent had seven children, some of whom died in infancy. Besides the above-mentioned Lucy, there was an "only son," Samuel, Jr., and daughters Sarah and Rebecca, who became the first and the second wife, respectively, of Nathaniel Hawkins.

The next to serve the Milk Row school was a prominent personage, in his day, in this part of Charlestown. He and the faithful partner of his toils are perhaps the best-known local figures of that eighteenth century time. We refer to Peter Tufts, Jr., and Anne Adams Tufts. He was elected to his office May 7, 1771, and continued therein two or three years. For an account of him the reader is referred to the admirable article on the Tufts family, by Dr. E. C. Booth, in Vol. I. of this magazine. A few additional dates may not be out of place. This worthy



couple were married April 19, 1750. Their graves may be seen in the old Phipps-street yard, Charlestown, where it is recorded that Mr. Tufts died March 4, 1791, aged sixty-three, and his widow, February 7, 1813, aged eighty-four. A list of their twelve children, with some of their descendants, may be found in Wyman's "History of Charlestown."

The next name to interest us is that of Stephen Miller. May 2, 1774, it was voted that he have an order for what he had expended for the school, £21 3s 4d; and April 18, 1776, we read: "Agreed with Stephen Miller, one of the committee for the school without the Neck, that he have an order for £34 10s 0d, the whole sum named for said school. But as Mr. Gardner's and Mr. Russell's orders were drawn (but not paid) and recorded in this book, this is deducted, and makes his payment £20 17s 4d." These amounts, then, represent what it cost the town of Charlestown to maintain the Milk Row school, at the time of the Revolution. It also shows us that, unlike the one on the peninsula, this school was not suspended, at least for any length of time, during the exciting scenes that followed the eventful April 19, 1775.

Stephen Miller represented one of the old families of Somerville. He was the son of James<sup>3</sup> (James<sup>2</sup>, Richard<sup>1</sup>) Miller and Abigail Frost, and was born in 1718. He followed the blacksmith's trade, and died February, 1791, aged seventy-three. By his will, he left to the negroes of the town £20, and made generous provision for the widow and children of his brother James, besides remembering other relatives. This James Miller was slain on Somerville soil by the British on the day of the Lexington and Concord fight, and near the spot a tablet has been placed to commemorate the event.

From 1776 to 1793 Milk Row school was directed by three men, who in turn acted in the capacity of local committeeman, Timothy Tufts, Samuel Tufts, and Nathaniel Hawkins. Some time before 1776 we read that the citizens in town meeting assembled, for some reason or other, discontinued the practice of choosing a local superintendent, and voted that the selectmen should have sole charge of the school without the Neck, and full



powers "to proportion the money among the inhabitants as they shall judge equitable." Often, no doubt, these three gentlemen, without any special appointment, performed their school duties because they were members of the board of selectmen; and Stephen Miller may have served his constituents in consequence of such authority.

October 10, 1776, Timothy Tufts is first mentioned, when he received for the school under his care the sum of £22 13s 5d. May 8, 1780, the year of inflated values, the selectmen, with Samuel Gardner added, were made a committee to regulate all the schools, and the following December Mr. Tufts, as one of this body, received for his school the enormous sum of £1,771 2s 6d. In 1782 Mr. Tufts, selectman, was empowered to disburse for the Milk Row school £35 5s. And thus it was, with varying amounts, from that year to 1788. In November, 1790, he seems to have been appointed to this office for the last time. More than once, with Nathaniel Hawkins, he was empowered to make a division of the school money, and December, 1791, we read that he had an order on the town treasurer for £3 17s 6d, to furnish wood for the school under his care.

The name of Samuel Tufts does not occur very often in connection with school affairs. As town treasurer, he was thrown into close relations with the selectmen, and must have been intimately acquainted with the school in his own section. May 11, 1778, with Caleb Call, Samuel Gardner, and Philemon Russell, he was appointed to regulate the outside schools of the town. The following year this committee consisted of Samuel Tufts, Samuel Gardner, and Amos Warren. February, 1782, the school, under the direction of Samuel Tufts, received £29 10s to offset the expenses of the year before.

Nathaniel Hawkins, generally styled Collector Hawkins, as one of the selectmen, was acting for the schools as early as 1783. His first recorded service was in 1784, when he was appointed, with Esquire Tufts, to select teachers for the outside schools. January 2, 1786, he was put at the head of a committee of three "to collect the number of children, both male and female, in each of the three districts, between the ages of 5 and 16." This was



our first school census. It is much to be regretted that we have not the results of their investigations. We have already referred to Mr. Hawkins' services, in company with Mr. Tufts, in dividing the school money. To do this to the satisfaction of all concerned required men of tact. We have no reason to believe that these gentlemen were unsuccessful. June, 1788, Mr. Hawkins is first recorded as receiving his proportion of the town money for the school in his district. Again, January 5, 1789, he is one of a committee of five to divide the school money for the year preceding, according to the taxes, and Milk Row received £31 2s 8d. February 7, 1791, the same amount was disbursed by him; in 1792, £38; in February, 1793, £41. These sums are each for the year preceding. As Mr. Hawkins continued his services into the next period of our school history, we will leave further mention of him for some future chapter.

Samuel Tufts, like his brothers Peter, Nathan, and Timothy, found a helpmate among the Adamses, of Cambridge, but Martha Adams, his wife, was not, I believe, a daughter of Joseph Adams. Our interest in Samuel Tufts to-day centres chiefly in the old homestead on Somerville avenue, where his father dwelt before him. Here he lived out a useful life of ninety-one (91) years, and died in 1828. Dr. Booth, in the article before mentioned, gives us a delightful picture of the old gentleman—tall, white-haired, and rather stern—as he used to sit sunning himself on his porch as the children from the old schoolhouse at the corner of the burying ground would come to his house for water. This house, now marked with its historic tablet, we are told, is the oldest building in our city. Long may it be spared for its venerable associations!

We can see these brothers, fair types of the generation which they represented, as they rode to Charlestown and back, often late at night, summer and winter, in their faithful attendance to public duties. Timothy, who died in 1805, seems to have gained the more distinction, and no doubt the title of "Squire" became him well. That he was regarded with some familiarity, in spite of the dignity of his office, we gather from the fact that the town books not unfrequently speak of him as "Timy" Tufts. An inter-



view with his grandson and namesake, who is peacefully passing his days as Somerville's oldest (native) citizen, in the home of his ancestors on Elm street, should not be missed by those who have any veneration for the past services of a noteworthy family. The college on our borders, we trust, will add lustre to the name of Tufts when all of that race are dead and gone. What can Somerville do to honor those who so carefully guarded the domestic interests of this little community in days that were fraught with great deeds, but marked, as well, with an Arcadian simplicity?

During all the years which we have been considering the name of not a single teacher for the Milk Row school appears upon the records. Again, there is no evidence that the town of Charlestown had as yet incurred the expense of building a schoolhouse for this section. To judge from the records, there was never a time, after 1736, when there was no building. Perhaps its erection dated from the days when Isaac Royal was making his munificent gifts to the school without the Neck. The following are some of the brief references to a structure which stood probably where a later schoolhouse was built, on a corner of the present cemetery lot, Somerville avenue. After January, 1790, the school districts were designated by numbers, that in Charlestown proper being No. 1, and ours at Milk Row No. 2:—

February 11, 1783, to pay Samuel Tufts £9 10s for repairs at the schoolhouse.

February 24, 1785, to allow Timothy Tufts, Esq., order for repairs of schoolhouse, £5 3s.

February 7, 1791, Timothy Tufts, Esq., bill for repairing school without the Neck, 7s.

July 3, 1792, Joseph Adams' bill for repairing school No. 2, £2 4s 7d.

[To be continued.]



# INDEX

Abbie, Aunt (Tufts), 41.  
Abbott, Mrs. Hull, 45.  
Abbott, Rev. Mr. Hull, 45.  
Adams, Anna, 89.  
Adams, Anne, 89.  
Adams, Charles, 40.  
Adams, Chester, 22.  
Adams, Hannah, 89.  
Adams, Harriet A., 22.  
Adams, President John, 18.  
Adams, Joseph, 22, 40, 69, 89, 92, 93.  
Adams, Martha, 92.  
Adams, Mary, 89.  
Adams, Nathan, 69.  
Adams, Rebecca, 89.  
Adams, Samuel, 40.  
Adams, Thomas, 89.  
Aldersey Street, Somerville, 71.  
Alewife Brook, 31.  
Alewife Brook District, 15, 87.  
Alewife Meadow, 54.  
Allerdale, Lords of, 49.  
Allerdale Ward, 49  
Ames, Governor Oliver, 31.  
Anderson, Mistress Rebecca, 18.  
Andover, Mass., 68.  
Andros, Governor, 31.  
Ann Street, Boston, 4.  
"Arbella, The," 29.  
Arlington, Mass., 15, 38, 56, 74, 87.  
Ash Street, Boston, 51.  
Austin Street, Somerville, 3.  
Baldwin, George Rumford, 3.  
Baldwin, Loammi, 2, 3.  
Barrett, Samuel, Jr., 11.  
Bartlett, Hon. Josiah, M. D., 48.  
Bell Rock, Malden, 58.  
Big Bethel, 35.  
Billerica, Mass., 1, 7, 9.  
Bishop of London, 18.  
Blackstone, Lone Settler of Boston, 30.  
Blackstone Street, Boston, 4.  
"Blessing of the Bay, The," 33.  
Booth, Dr. E. C., 20, 89, 92.  
Boston Avenue, Somerville, 3.  
Boston Gazette, 65.  
Boston & Lowell Railroad, 8.  
Boston & Maine Railroad, 10.  
Botanic Gardens, Cambridge, 75.  
Boles, John, 41.  
Bowman, Francis, 38.  
Bowman, Hon. Selwyn Z., 42.  
Bowman, Zadoc, 42.  
Bradish, Hannah, 65.  
Bradshaw, John, 16.  
Bradshaw, Jonathan, 68.  
Bradstreet, Samuel, 43.  
Brattle Street, Cambridge, 51, 52.  
Brattle, William, 55.  
Bredge, Mathew, Sr., 83.  
Breed's Hill, Charlestown, 47.  
Brigade Band of Boston, 2.  
Brigham, Berwick on Tweed, 50.  
Brigham, Children of Thomas and Mercy, 56.  
Brigham, Mercy, 53.  
Brigham, Norfolk Co., Eng., 50.  
Brigham, Peter B., 56.  
Brigham, Peter T., Esq., 53.  
Brigham, Thomas, The Puritan, 49.  
Brigham, Town of, Duthfield, Eng., 49.  
Brigham, William E., 49.  
Brigham, W. I. T., 51.  
British Museum, 73.  
Brighton, Mass., 53, 79.  
Broadway, Somerville, 22, 31.  
Broadway Park, 3, 31.  
Brooks, Captain Caleb, 16.  
Brooks Estate, West Medford, 3.  
Brooks (family), 42.  
Brown, Jonathan, 41.  
Bullard, Colonel Samuel, 38.  
Bunker Hill, Charlestown, 66.  
Bunker Hill National Bank, 21.  
Bunker Hill Tavern, 7.  
Burgoyne (General), 60.  
Burke (Edmand), 50.  
Burr, Samuel, 14.  
Bury Street, Edmonds, 25.  
Calder, Captain, 67.  
Calendar Close Rolls, 50.  
Call, Caleb, 91.  
Calley, Lydia (Stimpson), 65.  
Calley, Robert, 65.



Cambridge, 9, 31, 47, 49, 50, 51, 53, 74, 75, 76, 78, 80, 82, 83, 84, 85.  
 Cambridge, First so Called, 75.  
 Cambridge Cemetery, 74.  
 Cambridge, Eng., 25.  
 "Cambridge Farms," 84, 85.  
 Cambridge Gas Light Company, 70.  
 Cambridge Observatory, 75.  
 Canada, 86.  
 Canal Street, Boston, 4.  
 Carleton, S. A., 42.  
 Carter, Ruel, 2.  
 Cartwright (Carteret), Philip, 16.  
 Central Club Association, 21.  
 Chamber of Commerce, Boston, 70.  
 Champney, Richard, 76.  
 Charles, King, 77.  
 Charles River, 4, 27, 51, 54, 56, 71.  
 Charlestown, 3, 5, 7, 9, 11, 16, 18, 19, 20, 29, 30, 44, 47, 48, 49, 53, 60, 65, 74, 88, 89, 90.  
 Charlestown. The Schools of Beyond the Neck, 87-93.  
 Charlestown Schools in the Eighteenth Century, 11-20.  
 Charlestown Schools Within the Peninsula, 43-48, 64-69.  
 Chelmsford, Mass., 1, 7.  
 Chelsea, Mass., 71.  
 City Square, Charlestown, 30.  
 Clarendon Hill, 54, 56.  
 Clark, Joan, 73.  
 Clark, Sarah, 65.  
 Cleveland, Aaron, 14.  
 Clopton, Thomasine, 26.  
 Coggan, John, 26.  
 Coitmore, Martha, 26.  
 Cole, John F., 40.  
 Colonies, United, of New England, 30.  
 Conant's Island, 30.  
 Concord, Mass., 47, 77, 78, 82, 85, 84, 85.  
 Concord Bridge, 38.  
 Concord, N. H., 6.  
 Concord River, 1, 9, 31.  
 Connecticut, 74.  
 Cooper, John, 78, 79, 80.  
 Cooper, Lydia, 73, 78, 80.  
 Cordis, Captain, 67.  
 Corlet, Elijah, 82.  
 Cotton, —, 74.  
 Cotton, Anna (Moses), 21.  
 Cotton, Mary Belle, 21.  
 Cotton, William Wallace, 21.  
 Countess of Lincoln, 27.  
 Cowes, Isle of Wight, 29.  
 Crackbone, Gilbert, 76.  
 Cradoek, Governor, 27, 31.  
 Cross Street, Boston, 4.  
 Cross Street, Somerville, 22, 24, 43.  
 Crusades, The, 50.  
 Culverwell, —, 25.  
 Cushing, Matthew, 14, 44.  
 Cushing, Sarah (Loring), 44.  
 Cushing, Solomon, 44.  
 Cutter, Daniel, 69.  
 Cutter, Edward, 24.  
 Cutter, Fitch, 24.  
 Cutter, —, 24.  
 Dame, Elizabeth, 19.  
 Dana, S. L., 9.  
 Danforth, Nicholas, 52.  
 Danforth, Deputy Governor Thomas, 55.  
 Danforth, Thomas, 53.  
 Dedham, Mass., 88.  
 Defence, Shlp, 73, 74, 79.  
 Derwent, Cumberlandshire, Eng., 49.  
 Despeaux, Helen M., 36.  
 Devonshire Street, Boston, 30.  
 Dickering Wapentake, East Riding, Yorkshire, Eng., 49.  
 Dix, Joel, 9.  
 Dogget, John, 51.  
 Domesday Book, 50.  
 Dorchester, Mass., 48.  
 Downer (family), 43.  
 Drake's History of Middlesex County, 5, 9, 60.  
 Dudley, Deputy Governor Thomas, 27, 28, 33, 52.  
 Dunning's Coal Wharf, 3.  
 Dutton, H. W. & Son, 56.  
 Eddy, Caleb, 8, 9.  
 Edmunds, John, 66.  
 Edward II., King, 50.  
 Edwardston, Eng., 25.  
 Edgerly, Adine Fitz (Pratt), 38.  
 Edgerly, Annie E. W. (Mixer), 38.  
 Edgerly, Caroline, 38.  
 Edgerly, Charles Brown, 38.  
 Edgerly, Edward Everett, 36, 38.  
 Edgerly, Helen M. (Despeaux), 38.  
 Edgerly, John S., 36-43, 65.  
 Edgerly, John Woods, 38.  
 Edgerly, Madeline Lemalfa, 38.  
 Edgerly, Samuel, 37.  
 Edgerly Schoolhouse, 43.  
 Edgerly, Thomas, 37, 43.  
 Eldridge, —, 42.  
 Elliot, —, 32.  
 Elliot, Charles D., 25, 56, 59, 70.



Emerson, John S., 57.  
 Endecott, ——, 29.  
 Essex, Eng., 25.  
 Everett, Hon. Edward, 38, 65.  
 Everett, Governor, 24.  
 "Faire Grammar School," 52, 82.  
 Fillebrown (family), 24.  
 First Congregational (Unitarian) Church of Somerville, 21.  
 "First Church Gathering," 75.  
 Fiske, David, 78, 84.  
 Fiske, David, Sr., 83.  
 Fitz, Abel, 20.  
 Fitz, N. E., 42.  
 Foorth, Mary, 25.  
 Forster, Charles, 41.  
 Forster School, 42.  
 Fort Washington, 51.  
 Forth Willm, 25.  
 Fort Winthrop, 30.  
 Foss, Sam Walter, 62.  
 Foster, Captain, 48.  
 Foye, John, 12.  
 Framingham, Mass., 78, 86.  
 Francis, Nathaniel, 16.  
 Franklin Park, 7.  
 Franklin Street, Somerville, 24.  
 Fresh Pond, 54, 74.  
 Fresh Pond Meadow, 53.  
 Frost, Abigail, 90.  
 Frost, Joseph, 13, 15, 16.  
 Frothingham, Historian, 47.  
 Frothingham's History of Charlestown, 19, 59.  
 Frothingham, Deacon Samuel, 14, 67.  
 Furber, William H., 60.  
 Gardner, Henry, 16.  
 Gardner Locks, 3.  
 Gardner Row District, 15, 87.  
 Gardner, Samuel, 91.  
 Garrad, Margaret, 73.  
 "General Sullivan, The," 26.  
 George III., King, 38.  
 Gibson's Lock, 3.  
 Gilman, Charles E., 38.  
 Glines, Jacob T., 43.  
 Goodwin, Timothy, 44.  
 Governor's Garden, 30.  
 Governor's Island, 30.  
 Great Stanbridge, Eng., 25.  
 Greaves, Thomas, Esq., 12, 14.  
 "Green, The," 30.  
 Griffin, ——, 22.  
 Groton, Eng., 25, 35.  
 Groton Manor, England, 25.  
 Hadley, Eng., 25.  
 Hale, Edward Everett, 39.  
 Hamet, William, 53.  
 Hancock, Rev. John, 84.  
 Hanover Street, Boston, 4.  
 Harding (family), 43.  
 Harlackenden, Roger, Esq., 75.  
 Harris, Cary, 48.  
 Harris, Thaddeus Mason, D. D., 48.  
 Harris, William, 46, 47.  
 Harris, Captain William, 48, 64, 67.  
 Harris, Abijah, 44.  
 Harvard College, 18, 44, 48, 65, 70, 82.  
 Harvard Square, 75, 78, 82.  
 Harvard University, 9, 51, 66.  
 Hastings, Samuel, 79.  
 Hawes, Frank Mortimer, 11, 43, 64, 87.  
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 89, 90, 91.  
 Day, John, 67.  
 Hayes, A. A., 9.  
 Hayes, John S., 36, 60.  
 Haymarket Square, Boston, 4.  
 Hays, ——, 67.  
 Hayward, N., 88.  
 Hemans, ——, 64.  
 Henley, Samuel, 43.  
 Henley, Samuel, Esq., 67.  
 Henry I., 50.  
 Henry VIII., 25.  
 Hills, John, 66.  
 Hills, Thomas, 66.  
 Hillsboro, N. H., 38.  
 Hingham, Mass., 34, 44.  
 "Historic Genealogical Register, New England, 80.  
 "Historic Heights and Points," 60.  
 History of Medford, Brooks-Usher, 15.  
 Hittenger, ——, 40, 65.  
 Holbrook, Samuel, 68.  
 Hooker, ——, 74.  
 Hopkins Classical School, 70.  
 Horn Pond, 2.  
 Horn Pond Brook, 3.  
 Horn Pond House, 3, 7.  
 Horn Pond Locks, 2, 3.  
 Hotten, Camden, 50.  
 Houghton (family), 24.  
 Hunt, William, 55.  
 Hard Mercy, 55.  
 Hutchinson, Samuel, 16.  
 Incense, Ship, 73.  
 Ipswich, Mass., 78.  
 Jackson, Dr. Charles T., 9.  
 Jackson, Edward, 76.  
 Jackson, Patrick T., Esq., 8.



Jackson, Richard, 76.  
 James, King, 27, 28, 77.  
 Jane, 88.  
 Jaques, Colonel, 24, 41.  
 Jaques, William, 41.  
 Jenner, Thomas, Town Clerk, 11.  
 Jenny, 88.  
 Johnson, John, 82.  
 Jones, Dorcas, 85.  
 Jones, Ruth, 68.  
 Keene, Sarah A. (Vinal), 71.  
 Kendall's Boston Brass Band, 2.  
 Kent, Benjamin, 88.  
 Kent, Ebenezer, 43, 88.  
 Kent, Joseph, 14, 15, 16, 88.  
 Kent, Lucy, 89.  
 Kent, Mehitable, 88.  
 Kent, Rebecca, 88, 89.  
 Kent, Samuel, 16, 88, 89.  
 Kent, Samuel, Jr., 89.  
 Kent, Sarah, 89.  
 Kent, Stephen, 88.  
 Kent Street, Somerville, 88.  
 Kent, Hon. William H., 88.  
 Kettell, Elizabeth, 6.  
 Kettle, Jonathan, 12, 14.  
 Lady Superior, The, 22.  
 Lamson, Nathaniel, 16.  
 Leland, Caleb W., 38.  
 Lemmon, Joseph, 14.  
 Levett, Captain, 29.  
 Lewis' Wharf, 70.  
 Lexington, 47, 71, 74, 85.  
 Lexington, First Church Established in, 83.  
 Lidgett, Charles, 31.  
 Lincoln, Mass., 74, 85.  
 Lincolnshire, Eng., 27.  
 Local History, Teaching of, in the Public Schools, 57-64.  
 London, Eng., 26, 73.  
 Longfellow, H. W., 82.  
 Lord Macaulay, 64.  
 Lovell's Island, 12, 13.  
 Lowell, Mass., 4, 5, 6, 8, 9.  
 Lowell Road, 3.  
 Lowell & Nashua Railroad, 10.  
 Luxford, —, 32.  
 Lynn Farm, 12.  
 Lyon, The Ship, 32.  
 Magoun, —, 40.  
 Main Street (Broadway), Somerville, 22.  
 Main Street, Charlestown, 3.  
 Main Street, Medford, 3.  
 Malden, Mass., 12, 58, 66.  
 Mallet, Isaac, 66, 67.  
 Manet Thomas, 76.  
 Maple Meadow Brook, 2.  
 Marlboro, Mass., 55.  
 Mason, Rebecca, 48.  
 Mason, Thaddeus, Esq., 48.  
 Massachusetts Bay, 27.  
 Massachusetts Bay Company, 27.  
 Massachusetts Genealogical Society, 65.  
 Massachusetts Historical Society, 63.  
 Massachusetts Medical Association, 18.  
 Mather Cotton, 30, 35.  
 McGill, Robert, 7.  
 Medford, 3, 7, 10, 15, 16, 31, 38, 55, 69, 87.  
 Medford Side District, 15.  
 Medford-street School, 70.  
 Menotomy Bridge, 75.  
 Menotomy (West Cambridge), 18.  
 Meredith, N. H., 37.  
 Merriam, Joseph, 78, 82.  
 Merrimac River, 1, 5, 10, 27.  
 Middlesex Bleachery, 88.  
 Middlesex Canal, 22.  
 Middlesex Canal, Course of, The, 1, 2, 3, 4.  
 Middlesex Canal, Fare on, 5.  
 Middlesex Canal, Historical Sketch of, concluded, 1-11.  
 Middlesex Canal, Locks on, 1, 2, 3.  
 Middlesex Canal, Merchandise Boats on, 4, 5.  
 Middlesex Canal, Passage Boats on, 6.  
 Middlesex Canal, Rafts on, 6.  
 Middlesex Canal, Regulations of, 7.  
 Middlesex Canal, Toll on, 4.  
 Middlesex Canal Tow Path, 7.  
 Middlesex Village, 1, 5, 9, 10.  
 Milborne, Captain Peter, 29.  
 Milk Row, District of, 15, 87, 88.  
 "Milk Row" Primary School, 70.  
 Milk Row School, 89, 90, 91, 93.  
 Milk Street, Boston, 30.  
 Miller, James, 90.  
 Miller, Richard, 12.  
 Miller, Stephen, 90, 91.  
 Mistick, 31, 32.  
 Mistick River, 29.  
 Mitchell Lather, 22, 38.  
 Mitchell, —, 79.  
 Mitchell, Nathaniel, 22.  
 Morse, Rev. Abner, 49, 51, 52, 53, 55, 56.  
 Mount Benedict, 3, 9.



Mt. Auburn Cemetery, 74.  
 Much Bromley, Essex County, Eng., 73.  
 Mystic Bridge, 19.  
 Mystic Lake, 11.  
 Mystic Pond, 36, 87.  
 Mystic River, 3, 6, 30, 31.  
 Mystic Trotting Park, 3.  
 Mystic Valley Railroad, 11.  
 Nahumkeck (Salem), 29.  
 Nashua & Lowell Railroad, 9.  
 Natascot, 32.  
 Nathan Tufts Park, 20.  
 Nayland, Suffolk County, Eng., 73, 82.  
 Neighborhood Sketch No. 7, 22.  
 Neighborhood Sketch No. 7, Map of, 23.  
 Newell, Eliphilet, 67.  
 "Newe Towne," 74, 75.  
 New York, 44.  
 Nichols' Inn, 2.  
 Nichols' Lock, 2.  
 North Market Street, Boston, 4.  
 North Street, Boston, 4.  
 Norton, Rev. Jacob, 18.  
 Nowell, Increase, 28.  
 Nun's Well, 50.  
 Oakman, —, 42.  
 Oakes, Edward, 76, 79.  
 oburne (Woburn), 83.  
 Odin House, The, 38.  
 Olin, John, Jr., 65.  
 Old England, 27.  
 Old Powder House, 47, 87.  
 Old South Church, 30.  
 Old State House, 4.  
 Outline of Study of Somerville History, 60, 61.  
 Oxbow, 2.  
 Oyster Bay, N. H., 37.  
 Paige, —, 51, 73.  
 Palestine, 50.  
 Parker, Benjamin, 16.  
 Parker, Captain John, 71.  
 Parker, Rev. Theodore, 71.  
 Parkman, Dr. Samuel, 38.  
 Paul Revere's Ride, 60.  
 Payne, Edward, Master, 51.  
 Payson, Samuel, 68.  
 Peggy, 88.  
 Perry, Hon. A. A., 42.  
 Philip, King, 86.  
 Phillips, Elizabeth, 18.  
 Phillips, Henry, 12.  
 Phipps, Frances, 68.  
 Phipps, John, 68.  
 Phipps, Joseph, 16, 68.  
 Phipps Street, Charlestown, 18, 90.  
 Pierce, —, 29.  
 Pierce, Augusta Smith, 71.  
 Pierce, James, 16.  
 Pierce, John, 71.  
 Pierce, Sarah, 71.  
 Pierce, William, 32.  
 Pigeon, John, 88.  
 Plymouth, Mass., 30.  
 Poor (family), 42.  
 Portsmouth, N. H., 21, 37.  
 "Pound, The," 24.  
 Powder House, 20, 31.  
 Prentice, Rev. Thomas, 45.  
 Prospect Hill, 38, 57, 60.  
 Putnam (General), 58.  
 Quincy Market, 4.  
 "Raising of the Flag on Prospect Hill," 62.  
 Rand, John, 43.  
 Rand, Samuel, 16.  
 Rand, William, 16.  
 Reed, Seth, 16.  
 Revere, Mass., 71.  
 Revere, Paul, 60.  
 Rice, Edmund, 55.  
 Riddle, George, 42.  
 Ring, —, 22.  
 River Meadow Brook, 1.  
 Rockie Meadow, 54.  
 Roxbury, Mass., 9, 38.  
 Royal House, 3.  
 Royal, Isaac, 19, 20, 31, 98.  
 Royal, Isaac, Esq., 19.  
 Royal, Isaac, Sr., 19.  
 Russell, Daniel, 11, 12, 14, 46.  
 Russell, Rev. Daniel, 12.  
 Russell, James, 43.  
 Russell, Joseph, 18.  
 Russell, Philemon, 91.  
 Russell, Philemon R., 18.  
 Russell, Thomas, 31.  
 Russell, Walter, 89.  
 Sagamore, John, 31.  
 Salstonstall, Richard, 28, 50, 51, 52.  
 Sargent, Adron, 40.  
 Sawyer (family), 43.  
 School Committees, 1736-1753, 16.  
 Schoolmaster, Itinerant, 17.  
 Scituate, Mass., 70.  
 Scotland, 35.  
 Sewall, Judge, 84.  
 Shawsheen River, 1.  
 Shawshine (Billerica), 53.  
 Sheafe, Edward, Jr., 43.  
 Shepherd, Rev. Thomas, 73.



Shirley, Governor, 31.  
 Simson, Joseph, 11, 12, 65.  
 Skelton, —, 29.  
 Skinner, John, 16, 17.  
 Smith, —, 18.  
 Smith, Betsey, 37.  
 Smith, John, 60.  
 Somerville Historical Society, Meetings of, 72.  
 Somerville Hospital, 70.  
 Somerville National Bank, 70.  
 "Somerville Past and Present," 59.  
 Southey, Robert, 63.  
 Sowhegum Farm, 14.  
 Sparohauke, Nathaniel, 79.  
 Sparks Street, Cambridge, 51.  
 Spencer (family), 43.  
 Spot Pond, 11.  
 Sprague, John, 12.  
 Spring Lane, Boston, 30.  
 Standish, Miles, 60.  
 State Board of Education, 63.  
 Stearns, Sarah, 82.  
 Stearns, William, 24.  
 Stevens, John, 14.  
 Stickney (family), 42.  
 Stimson, Andrew, Jr., 12.  
 Stimson, Joseph, 12.  
 Stimpson, Rev. Joseph, 65.  
 Stoddard Locks, 2.  
 Stone, Daniel, 78.  
 Stone, David, 77, 78, 85.  
 Stone, Deacon, 76, 79, 84, 86.  
 Stone, Elizabeth, 78.  
 Stone, Gregory, Children of, 78.  
 Stone, Gregory, "Deacon," 76, 79.  
 Stone, Gregory, Ancestry of, 73.  
 Stone, Gregory, Part of Inventory of, 81.  
 Stone, Gregory, and Some of His Descendants, 73-86.  
 Stone, Gregory, Will of, 80.  
 Stoneham, Mass., 69.  
 Stone, Constable Isack, 83.  
 Stone, John, 78, 80.  
 Stone, Samuel, 77, 78, 80, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86.  
 Stone, Deacon Samuel, 82, 85.  
 Stone, Samuel, East, 85.  
 Stone, Samuel, Sr., 83, 85.  
 Stone, Samuel, West, 85.  
 Stone, Sara A., 73.  
 Stone, Sarah, 78.  
 Stone, Simon, 73, 79.  
 Stone, Symond, 73.  
 Stower River, 25.  
 Strickland, Charles, 42.  
 Sudbury, Mass., 78.  
 Sullivan, James, 8.  
 Susan and Ellin, 50.  
 Swan, Samuel, Jr., 67.  
 Sweetser, Abigail, 12.  
 Sweetser, Henry Phillips, 65, 67.  
 Sweetser, Colonel John, 38, 65.  
 Sweetser, Seth, 12, 44, 64, 65, 67.  
 Sycamore Street, Somerville, 42.  
 Symmes, Jack, 69.  
 Symmes, William, 16.  
 Talbot Mills, 1.  
 Temple, Robert, 31.  
 Temple, Robert, Jr., 31.  
 "Ten Hills," 30, 31, 33, 41.  
 "The Farms," 78, 79, 82, 83, 84, 85.  
 "The Farmers," 83.  
 "The Rocks," 53, 55, 56.  
 Thorning, —, 24.  
 Three Pole Lane, 24.  
 Tindall, Margaret, 26.  
 Torrey, —, 22, 24.  
 Town Hill, 67.  
 Trevett, Robert, 12.  
 Tring, Hertfordshire, Eng., 65.  
 Trinity College, 25.  
 Trumbull, Frances, 68.  
 Trumbull, James, 67.  
 Trumbull, Phoebe (Johnson), 67.  
 Trumbull, Timothy, 67, 68.  
 Tufts, Abby, 22.  
 Tufts, Albert Clifford, 20, 21.  
 Tufts, Anne Adams, 89.  
 Tufts, Asa, 22, 42.  
 Tufts, Charles, 70.  
 Tufts College, 70.  
 Tufts, Cotton, 17, 18.  
 Tufts, Daniel, 24.  
 Tufts, Edmund, 22, 38, 41.  
 Tufts, Elizabeth, 21.  
 Tufts, "Esquire," 91.  
 Tufts, Gilbert, 42.  
 Tufts, James, 16.  
 Tufts, Mary Jane (Fitz), 20.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 20, 21, 89, 92.  
 Tufts, Nathan, Jr., 20.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 2nd, 42.  
 Tufts, Nathan, Sr., 38.  
 Tufts, Oliver, 38.  
 Tufts, Peter, 16, 66, 88, 89, 92.  
 Tufts, Peter, Jr., 69, 89.  
 Tufts, Rebecca, 89.  
 Tufts, Samuel, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93.  
 Tufts, Dr. Simon, 18.  
 Tufts, Timothy, 66, 89, 90, 91, 92.  
 Tufts, Timothy, Esq., 93.  
 Tufts, W., 89.



Tufts, Widow, 24.  
 Tufts, William, 42.  
 Turner, John, 66.  
 Turnpike, Medford, 22.  
 Underwood, Joseph, 11.  
 Unitarian Church, 40.  
 Ursuline Convent, 22.  
 Usher, Governor, 19, 31.  
 Vane, Sir Henry, 33.  
 Vassall, William, 28.  
 Venus, 88.  
 Vermont, 56.  
 Vinal, Anna Parker, 71.  
 Vinal, Josephine, 71.  
 Vinal, Leonora, 71.  
 Vinal, Leslie T., 71.  
 Vinal, Lydia (Stone), 70.  
 Vinal, Martha Adams, 71.  
 Vinal, Mary Lowell, 71.  
 Vinal, Quincy Adams, 37, 70.  
 Vinal, Robert A., 70.  
 Vinal, Deacon Robert, 37, 70.  
 Violet, 88.  
 Walters, William, 13.  
 Waltham, Mass., 74.  
 Wannottymies River, 31.  
 Warren, Amos, 91.  
 Washington (General), 58.  
 Washington Hall, 48.  
 Washington School, 52.  
 Washington Street, Boston, 30.  
 Watertown, Mass., 49, 51, 54, 73, 74,  
     75, 76, 80, 82, 84, 85.  
 Watertown, Original Area of, 74.  
 Webster, Professor John W., 9.  
 West Cambridge, 53.  
 West Indies, 19.  
 West Medford, Mass., 3.  
 Weston, Mass., 74.  
 Weymouth, Mass., 18.  
 Whittemore, ——, 69.  
 Willoughby, Francis, 79.  
 Wilmington, Mass., 2, 7, 11.  
 Wilson, ——, 30.  
 Wilson's Tavern, 2.  
 Winchester, Mass., 3.  
 Windmill, or Town Hill, 48.  
 Windmill Hill, Watertown, 52.  
 Wionepesaukee, N. H., 37.  
 Winter Hill, Somerville, 3, 19, 88.  
 Winthrop, Adam, 25.  
 Winthrop, Adam, Esq., 35.  
 Winthrop, Ann, 32.  
 Winthrop, Anne, 25.  
 Winthrop, Fitz John, 35.  
 Winthrop, Fort, 30.  
 Winthrop, Henry, 29, 33.  
 Winthrop, Governor John, 25, 26,  
     31, 33, 36.  
 Winthrop, John, 25-36.  
 Winthrop, John, Character of, 35,  
     36.  
 Winthrop, John, Extracts from the  
     Diary of, 25, 26, 29, 31, 32.  
 Winthrop, John, Residences of, 30,  
     31.  
 Winthrop, John, Jr., 31, 35.  
 Winthrop, Margaret, 33.  
 Winthrop, Hon. Robert C., 35.  
 Winthrop, Steven, 35.  
 Winthrop, Major Theodore, 35.  
 Winthrop, Waitstill, 35.  
 Woburn, Mass., 2, 7, 8, 9, 84.  
 Wood, D., 89.  
 Wood, David, Jr., 67, 68.  
 Woodbury, ——, 41.  
 Woodbury (family), 43.  
 Woods, Henry F., 42.  
 Woods, Lydia Watts, 38.  
 Woods, Moses, 38.  
 Woods, Moses, 1st, 38.  
 Wordsworth, William, 50.  
 Wright, Timothy, 13.  
 Wyeth, Nicholas, 53, 68.  
 Wymap, ——, 65, 67, 88, 90.  
 "The Old Burying Ground," Lexing-  
     ton, 85, 86.  
 Yorkshire, Eng., 49.







# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOLUME IV.

---

April, 1905

TO

January, 1906

---

Published by  
THE SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
Somerville, Mass.



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

April, 1905

Vol. IV.

No. 1

— 1942 —

## CONTENTS

---

ELMER HEWITT CAPEN	Dr. J. B. L. Moulton
THE FLORA OF SOMERVILLE	Louise A. Knoll
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHOUT THE PENINSULA	Frank M. Hawes
THE OLD ROYALL HOUSE, MEDFORD	Charles D. Ebb
OFFICERS OF SOMERVILLE HISTORICAL SOCIETY	21

---

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

AT

Society's Rooms, Tufts House, Sycamore Street  
Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

---

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SALVATOR WALTER BOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARL



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. IV.

APRIL, 1905

No. I

---

## ELMER HEWITT CAPEN

By David L. Maulsby

Elmer Hewitt Capen was born at Stoughton, April 5, 1838. He died at Tufts College, March 22, 1905.

He received his preparatory education at Pierce Academy, Middleborough, and at the Green Mountain Institute, Woodstock, Vt. He entered Tufts in 1856, and was graduated with the degree of A. B. in 1860. During the year 1859-60 Mr. Capen served in the Massachusetts legislature. He studied law with Thomas S. Harlow, of Boston, and at the Harvard Law School, but although admitted to the bar in 1864, he never practiced. Instead, he studied theology with the Rev. A. St. John Chambré, and in 1864 began to preach.

From 1865 till 1869 he was pastor of the Independent Christian church in Gloucester. The next year, partly on account of his wife's health, he removed to St. Paul, Minn., to take charge of the Universalist church there. In 1870 he was called to the First Universalist church in Providence, R. I. Here he remained for five years, meanwhile securing the erection of a fine church building.

In 1875 he was summoned to the presidency of Tufts College, a position he held until his death. Besides his administrative duties, he taught ethics, political science, and international law, until the establishment within the last few years of college departments including these subjects. His course in ancient law was continued into the year of his death. He also supplied the college pulpit.

President Capen was twice married: in 1866 to Miss Letitia Howard Mussey, of New London, Conn., who died in 1872; and in 1877 to Miss Mary Lincoln Edwards, of Brookline. His widow and three children survive him: Samuel Paul Capen, Ruth Paul Capen, and Rosamond Edwards Capen.



President Capen's honorary degrees are: A. M., received in 1877 from Tufts; D. D., 1879, from Lombard University; and LL.D., 1899, from Buchtel College.

The offices he has held include, besides the presidency of Tufts College, the presidency of the New England Commission on Admission Examinations, from its establishment until its last meeting (1886-1903); membership on the board of trustees of the Universalist General Convention, from 1877 to 1895; membership on the State Board of Education since 1889, involving the chairmanship of the board of visitors of the Normal School at Salem and that at Fitchburg, and of the building committees of both institutions. He served as president of the New England Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools, and of the lately-founded (1904?) Auxiliary Educational League. He was, also, since 1871, one of the trustees of Dean Academy. During the existence of the Massachusetts Law and Order League (1886-1900), he served as its president. Although never holding any local political office, Dr. Capen was chairman of the ward 4 delegation in the Somerville mayoralty convention in 1895, and led the revolt which resulted in the nomination of Albion A. Perry. Dr. Capen was also elected a delegate to the Republican National Convention of 1888, but did not serve. He was president of the Mystic Valley Club for five years; a charter member in his college days of the Theta Delta Chi Fraternity; an organization member of the Delta Chapter of Massachusetts, Phi Beta Kappa; and a director recently of the Bingham Hospital for Incurables. Besides, he held membership in the Twentieth Century Club, the University Club, the Boston Club, the New England Historic Genealogical Society, and the Somerville Historical Society.

President Capen's publications include the article on "The Philosophy of Universalism," in "The Latest Word of Universalism"; the article on "The Atonement," in the Universalist section of the Columbian Congress; the article on "Universalism" in Hertzog's Religious Cyclopaedia; and the articles on "Universalism" and "Tufts College" in the Encyclopaedia Britannica. More recent publications are a volume of "Occa-



sional Addresses," and a revised edition of the denominational service book, called "Gloria Patri."

A few words are insufficient to summarize this lifetime of service. Dr. Capen's public spirit is indicated in his pursuance of a vast round of public duties outside the requirements of his college presidency. As a college president, he was eager to lead in the educational progress of his time. It is in accord with his spirit that Tufts was the first New England college to substitute modern languages for Greek as an admission requirement, to omit Greek as a requirement for the A. B. degree, and to grant the degree on the completion of a definite amount of work rather than of a definite number of years of residence.

The growth of the college to university proportions is a further tribute to his liberality and sagacity. As an administrator, President Capen believed in allowing faculty and students alike the largest possible freedom. He was the reverse of a martinet in government, while exacting manliness and respect from the student body. As an orator, he was eloquent and strong. As a man, he was considerate and magnanimous, a friend to all in distress, quick to perceive the good qualities of his associates, and to put them to use. In private he loved his family life, and was a man of warm friendships. Now that he is gone, we shall appreciate him better. We shall continue to miss him, while recognizing the beneficence of his departure at the height of his power and in the flower of his usefulness.



## THE FLORA OF SOMERVILLE

By Louise A. Vinal

A city of 70,000 inhabitants, bounded on two sides by still larger cities, offers an unpromising field of research to the most enthusiastic botanist. But the interests of this society are largely in the days that are gone, and for this half-hour we will try and picture the vegetation of Somerville from the arrival of the first colonists to the time when the encroachments of the rapidly-growing city drove from its limits all but the most common of its native plants.

The first mention of the vegetation of that particular part of the Massachusetts Bay Colony which since 1842 has been known as Somerville was made by the surveying party that left Salem shortly after the arrival of Endicott and his colonists. They traveled through an "uncouth wilderness" until they reached Mishawum, now Charlestown, and they reported that "they found it was a neck of land generally full of stately timber, as was the main." And Thomas Graves, who came over as engineer of the Charlestown colony the next year, wrote home that "It is very beautiful in open lands mixed with goodly woods, and again open plaines, in some places five hundred acres, some places more, some lesse, not much troublesome for to cleere for the plough to goe in, no place barren but on the tops of the hills." He also says: "The grass and weeds grow up to a man's face in the lowlands." And the Rev. Mr. Higginson, writing of the settlements on Charles river, speaks of the "abundance of grass that groweth everywhere, both very thick, very long, and very high in divers places."

From these simple statements, it is not difficult to imagine the aspect of our city at that time. On the north, broad marshes extended along the Mystic river, from the Medford line to Charlestown Neck, the marsh grasses green and beautiful in their pristine freshness. On the south, Miller's river, or Willis creek, as it was first called, a broad inlet from the sea, reached beyond Union square, probably as far as where the bleachery now stands; and from there to Charlestown Neck was another



extent of salt marsh. And again on the west was a narrower strip of land that felt the influence of salt water where Alewife brook divides Somerville from Cambridge and Arlington. Numerous brooks flowed through valleys between the many hills, watering "large meadows, without any tree or shrub to hinder the scythe."

The hills of Somerville are drumlins, and were doubtless covered with the hardwood trees that thrive best on such dry, glacial soil—oak, chestnut, maple, beech, and birch. The little valleys and the swamps, the tracts of sand and clay offered conditions favorable to the growth of many different kinds of trees, of which pine, according to Higginson, "was the most plentiful of all wood and the most useful to the colonists." Altogether, these formed a primeval forest whose extent and variety and solemn grandeur excited the wonder and the admiration of the newly-arrived Englishmen. But the needs of the colonists made great inroads upon these mighty forests. The building of houses, and ships, and wharves, the constant demand for fire-wood, and the sending great quantities of timber back to England in the ships that brought out supplies to the colonists, coopers and cleavers of timber being sent out by the company in London to prepare it for shipping, soon made an appreciable difference in the character of the main, and from various items recorded in the first decade after the settling of Charlestown, we must infer that the proportion of cleared and grass land was great in Somerville.

In the list of the inhabitants of Charlestown in 1633 appears the name of Nicholas Stowers, herdsman, whose duties were "to drive the herd forth to their food in the main every morning, and bring them into town every evening." If the main had been an "uncouth wilderness," like the country farther back, or even an unbroken forest, the poor cows and goats would have suffered as much from the lack of proper food as did their owners in the first hard year after their arrival. But we have abundant testimony in the early records that the "cattle did thrive marvelously well."

Still more conclusive is the fact that in 1637 a large tract of



land lying between the Winter Hill road, now Broadway, and Cambridge was divided into "rights of pasturage," and after this the main was called the common.

But the destruction of the forest was so great that it was early necessary to take steps to prevent the needless waste of trees, and in 1636 it was voted in town meeting that a "fine of 5 shillings be imposed for every tree felled and not cut up." But several years later, when one Willoughby was building a ship, the town, to encourage the enterprise, gave him liberty to take timber from the common, without being obliged to cut up the tops of the trees.

And so the primeval forest was cut away, a second growth succeeding, to fall in its turn before the woodman's axe, and the cleared land slowly increased in extent until the Revolution. During the siege of Boston, when the colonial troops were encamped for nine months on the Somerville hills, the demand for firewood was great, and the last of the forest trees disappeared. The devastation wrought in Somerville during the siege is plainly set forth in a letter by Rev. William Emerson, written in the late summer of 1775. He says: "Who would have thought, twelve months past, that all Cambridge and Charlestown would be covered over with American camps, and cut up into forts and intrenchments, and all the lands, fields, orchards laid commonon,—horses and cattle feeding in the choicest mowing land, whole fields of corn eaten down to the ground, and large parks of well-regulated locusts cut down for firewood and other public uses." General Green, who commanded the troops on Prospect Hill, wrote December 31, 1775: "We have suffered prodigiously for want of wood. Many regiments have been obliged to eat their provisions raw for want of fuel to cook them, and notwithstanding we have burnt up all the fences and cut down all the trees for a mile around the camp, our sufferings have been inconceivable." And the following winter, when the Hessians were prisoners of war on Winter Hill, they used for firewood the last of the walnut trees, which gave the original name of Walnut Hill to what is now College Hill.

Fruit trees and ornamental trees were also sacrificed to keep



the poorly-clad soldiers from freezing, and the forests never again regained possession of the thoroughly denuded country.

But the kindly forces of nature work unceasingly, and soon the swamps and waste places, the roadsides and pasture walls were gladdened by the presence of those trees that could thrive under the new conditions. And this is the growth that abounded when the farming district of Charlestown in 1842 was made into the town of Somerville.

The juniper, which grows equally well on dry hills or in deep swamps, and the white birch, which flourishes in the poorest soil, grew freely everywhere; and these, with the elm, the typical New England tree that grows wherever a rich, moist soil receives the wind-blown seeds, were the most common trees.

A tract of salt marsh still remained on Washington street, where Lincoln field now is, and from there, through Concord and Oak streets, to Prospect street and the Cambridge line, was a lonesome tract of swampy land covered with low trees and bushes. On Prospect street, which was first called Pine street, was a large grove of pine trees, the last of which were cut down only a few years ago. Polly's Swamp was the largest tract of wild land extending along the valley north of Central street, toward Walnut Hill. Here all swamp-loving trees and shrubs were found, bound together by horse briar and brambles, so as to be almost impenetrable in many places. The birches and junipers grew far up onto the north slope of Spring Hill, the whole wild and extensive enough to furnish good gunning for small game.

Along the line of the Revolutionary forts on Prospect and Central Hills to Winter Hill were many old gnarled button-pear trees. These seldom grow spontaneously in Massachusetts, and it was popularly believed that they came from the seeds of pears eaten by the soldiers when quartered on these hills.

Rand's woods, on Elm street, below the Powder House, was the only grove of any extent on high land, and this was composed principally of evergreens, pitch and white pines, and junipers, with a few maples and oaks. But the number of forest trees in the new town was really very small. Probably not a



walnut, chestnut, hemlock, or spruce was growing wild at that time, plentiful as they must have been here originally, and in the opinion of Frank Henderson, Thomas Young, and other old residents, there were more trees in Somerville when it celebrated its semi-centennial in 1892 than there were in 1842.

But everywhere was a profusion of those shrubs and low bushes that make so much of the beauty and variety of New England vegetation. From the spice-bush in April to the weird witch-hazel of November was a succession of fair flowers and bright berries, and our country lanes were picturesque, if our hills were barren and our pastures bare of trees. In those years bushels of blueberries and huckleberries were picked every summer in the pastures round Oak and Springfield streets, cranberries grew abundantly in the meadows where the American Tube Works now stand, and everywhere was a wealth of wild roses, which the children gathered by the basketful, to be distilled into rose-water. One old resident of East Somerville remembers that the cardinal flower grew luxuriantly on the banks of the old canal, where it passed near her home on Mystic avenue, and Henry Munroe, a native of Somerville, and for many years a teacher of botany in the Chicago high schools, writes that in all his botanical trips, east and west, he has seldom seen a more beautiful sight than the bed of the old canal on Ten Hills Farm, when in early spring it was white as a snowdrift with the starry blossoms of the blood-root.

And here I would like to read a few verses from a song written by Mrs. Nancy T. Munroe, whose house on Walnut street was the first one built on the west slope of Prospect Hill. Walnut street was one of the original rangeways laid out in 1680. It was very steep and narrow, and this song was written in 1851 or '52, when the county commissioners ordered that it should be widened and the grade made easier, thus changing the country hillside lane into a town road. No description I could write would give so graphic a picture of the wildness and beauty of our narrow roads at that time:—



## A FAREWELL SONG TO THE LANE.

A song for the lane,  
The green old lane,  
That led from the hill  
To the level plain.

O gentle muse, ere it fade from sight,  
One feeble song to its praise indite.

The green old lane,  
It towered so high,  
The trees at the top  
Seemed to touch the sky.

On the moss-grown wall  
At either side  
The vines grew wild  
In native pride.

The wild rose blossomed,  
The locust tree,  
With its graceful foliage,  
Was fair to see.

A brook crossed the lane  
Near the drooping willow,  
Two planks formed a bridge  
O'er this placid willow.

A hawthorn grew  
In that green old lane,  
Just midway it stood  
'Tween the hill and the plain.

A moss-grown stone 'neath its shadow lay,  
And children played there many a day.

Alas! alas! for the green old lane!  
I never shall look on it thus again.  
The wants of the people the town must meet,  
The pleasant lane must be made a street.



They came with the axe, the plough, and spade,  
And heavy stones on the brook they laid.  
The willow branches they lopped away,  
And the hawthorn fell ere close of day.  
They ploughed up the vines all covered with berries,  
They cut down the tree all filled with cherries.

My heart grows sad  
At the beauty gone,  
But the work of improvement  
Must still go on.  
We must give up romance  
For the good of the town,  
And the dear old lane  
Must be leveled down.

So a sad farewell to the green old lane  
That led from the hill to the level plain.

In 1859 Henry H. Babcock was elected principal of the High School. He was a skilled botanist, a zealous collector, and knew the wild flowers of the neighborhood of Boston in their native haunts. Under his enthusiastic teaching, the meadows and swamps and hidden nooks of Somerville were explored as never before, and what floral treasures still lingered within the limits of the fast-growing town were brought to the little botany room in the old High School building. Here many a happy and profitable hour was spent after the school session was ended in puzzling over perplexing specimens, and in learning of that divine law which links the smallest fern with the mightiest tree of the forest, and without which any scientific classification would be impossible. When Mr. Babcock left the High School, Miss Mary D. Davis had charge of the botany classes, and her great interest in and enthusiasm for her favorite science made her a worthy successor of her former teacher. Edward Everett Edgerley, of the class of '63, was the most zealous collector in those days, and if his herbarium was available for reference, it would give the most complete list ever made of the wild flowers of Somerville in the early sixties.



The most distinctive feature of the Somerville flora at that time was that of the salt marshes along the Mystic river and the mill-pond on the north and east boundaries of the town. Most of the plants growing there were of more interest to the botanist than to the lover of wild flowers, the seashore golden-rod, perhaps the most brilliant of the golden-rods, and the marsh rosemary or sea-lavender being the only ones whose blossoms would attract attention from the ordinary passer-by. But the glaux, the atriplex, and the salicornias, mere weeds as they would be called, possessed an equal charm for one whose eye and mind were trained to appreciate every detail of the insignificant flower or the curiously-constructed seed.

Perhaps the greatest number of species was found in Polly's Swamp, many water-loving plants growing there. But the Ten Hills Farm district was the favorite haunt of the spring flowers, columbine and bloodroot, violets and early saxifrage growing without stint, while the shad bush and the wild cherry blossoms were greatly prized.

In the little strip of Palfry's Swamp that was left within the Somerville limits were a number of choice plants not found elsewhere. Among them may be mentioned the swamp azalea, the wild sensitive plant, the meadow beauty, and the dodder, and the High School scholars of to-day would be obliged to tramp many a long mile before they could find four such interesting flowers in our locality.

Gilman's field, as the large vacant lot on Walnut street, north of the Lowell railroad, was called, was another favorite tramping ground, its rocky ledges and boggy hollows revealing very diverse varieties of plants. There were the wild currant and gooseberry, the elder, button bush, the sweet pepper bush, and wild roses without stint, while equally interesting were the wild oats, the ground-nut, and the orchid that grew most abundantly in Somerville, the *spiranthes cernua*. But the red-letter day in our botanical calendar was when the fringed gentian was found here, where New Pearl street now crosses Walnut, and it seemed an act of graceful condescension for a flower sung by Bryant, Whittier, and Emerson to grace the wayside of our prosaic town.



The ferns grew freely in many parts of the town, but the favorite haunt of this interesting family was the south bank of the Lowell railroad, east of the Sycamore-street bridge, where the railroad is cut through a ledge of slate-stone. All the common ferns grew along the brook at the foot of the banking, but the real treasures were found in the crevices of the ledge above.

Rand's woods, already mentioned, always repaid us for a visit, the low cornel and the lady's slipper being the choicest flowers growing here.

But the rear of Mr. Holland's farm, back of where the elevated railroad car houses now stand, furnished us with more interesting specimens than any other spot in West Somerville. Here Alewife brook separated the farm from Cambridge, and in the spring were found many water-loving plants, among others, the pitcher plant, that most curious of all New England wild flowers; the marsh marigold, the arrowhead, the forget-me-not, and the buck bean, perhaps the choicest and most beautiful wild flower then growing in Somerville, in spite of its commonplace name; and Colonel Higginson doubtless thought he lavished high praise on this dainty flower when he said it possessed a certain "garden-like elegance."

In all long-settled countries there is always a large class of plants that become naturalized and are as common, and often much more tenacious of life, than the original occupants of the soil. Many of these plants possess blossoms of real beauty, but they also include most of the common weeds, chickweed, mayweed, and pigweed, burdock and thistles, pursley and sorrel, which follow the plough in all temperate regions as surely as do the planted crops. A number of these naturalized plants are natives of the Western states or of tropical America, but many more came originally from Europe, and were introduced in various ways. A few were brought over by the first colonists to give a little touch of home to their dreary abodes in a far-away land. The sweet briar and the barberry bush are of this number, and were among the first English plants to become naturalized in their adopted country. The mints, tansy, and plantain were evidently brought over on account of their medicinal value, and



the wild mustard and carrot, ornamental as they now are to fields and waysides, are escapes from our forefathers' vegetable gardens. Other interesting plants of this class which are still occasionally found in our city are the alsike, that pretty pink clover which originated in Sweden, where it is considered one of the most valuable of forage plants; the brilliant cone-flower, or black-eyed Susan, a native of our Western prairies, and unknown in New England fifty years ago; the mullein, the bladder campion, and the sky-blue succory, which Dr. Bigelow, who appreciated every charm of the flowers he so faithfully described, called an elegant plant. As for the field daisy, the buttercup, and the dandelion, they hold a much warmer place in our affections than do many of the choice native species. James Russell Lowell sings of the dandelion:—

“Dear common flower, that grow’st beside the way,  
Fringing the dusty road with harmless gold.

\* \* \* \* \*

“Thou art more dear to me  
Than all the prouder summer blooms may be,  
My childhood’s earliest thoughts are linked with thee.”

But the wild flowers have disappeared more rapidly and more completely than did the forests 250 years ago, and to-day it would be more difficult to coax back within our city limits the orchids and gentians and ferns, the meadow beauty and the pitcher plant of forty years ago, than to start a forest of oaks, beeches, and hickories.



CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS WITHOUT THE PENINSULA  
REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD.

Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

In closing our account of this period, it remains to speak of the Alewife Brook and the Gardner Row schools, both at the upper end of Charlestown. After 1790, when the four schools were designated by numbers, these were known as No. 3 and No. 4.

As we have before stated, the Alewife Brook district probably comprised that part of our city which lies west of College avenue. It extended well up into Arlington, and took in that part of Menotomy which belonged to Charlestown. The Gardner Row district extended along by the Mystic ponds as far as old Woburn line.

Like the Milk Row school, the affairs of these districts were managed, for the most part, by a local committeeman, who was usually selected at the annual town meeting in May. The selectmen were supposed to have control of all school affairs, and at times, when dissatisfaction arose, mostly from economical reasons, no local officer would be appointed to relieve them.

In 1754, when our account begins, Nathaniel Francis and Joseph Phipps were representing these two districts. The former had been elected as early as 1744, and served, with some interruptions, for seven years. The last mention we find of him is May 5, 1755, when it was agreed that his account for wood, etc., for the school without the Neck, amounting to £2 6s 4d, be allowed. This gentleman belonged to a family that gained more prominence on the Cambridge side of the line than in Charlestown; Paige and Wyman both speak of him. He died September 2, 1764, aged seventy-one, and was buried in West Cambridge.

Mr. Phipps served continuously from 1751 to 1757. He was a descendant of Solomon Phipps, an early settler of Charlestown, and in previous chapters we have given the family due prominence. According to Wyman, he was the father of



Frances, who became the wife of Timothy Trumbull, master of the town school in 1680-2. Mr. Phipps died June 27, 1795, aged seventy-two.

May 12, 1755, Mr. Phipps received "an order for £5 4s 9d, 1. m., for Mr. Jabez Whittemore keeping the school [Gardner Row?] without the Neck the year past." Doubtless this is the Jabez Whittemore who in 1756 "was approbated as inn-holder at his house without the Neck, where his father lived."

Mr. Francis's place on the board was filled by Henry Putnam, who, according to Wyman, was a new-comer from Danvers, and of the Israel Putnam stock. He continued in office for the next ten years, being elected for the last time in 1764. During this decade he distributed for his district £8 3s of the town's money yearly. Wyman is doubtless in error when he says Mr. Putnam was teaching without the Neck in 1760.

During these same ten years Mr. Phipps had been followed, in turn, by James Fosdick, Captain John Hancock, and Joseph Lamson, the first of whom served for the year 1757-8, the second from 1758 to 1760, and the third for the remaining five years, when, along with Mr. Putnam, he disappeared from the board.

Among many entries at this time, perhaps the most interesting is the following: April 3, 1758. "Agreed to allow James Fosdick as one of the committee without the Neck for schoolmaster, benches, firewood, and house rent amounting to £6 lawful money, being his proportion." In 1760 these two schools were receiving about the same amount of the town's money, a little more than £7 each. The Milk Row school was receiving, through Mr. Kent, £10 6s.

We have not thought it necessary to give an extended reference to these gentlemen. Wyman devotes several pages to the Fosdicks. James Fosdick (1716-1784) was prominent in town affairs, and left a good estate. In his inventory we read of a mansion house, two shops, three acres or more, near Prospect Hill, etc. We have had occasion in a previous article to speak of a Mr. Hancock who was teaching in 1724 in the Stoneham precinct. According to Wyman, that was the Rev. John Hancock, later of Braintree, and father of Governor Hancock.



This Captain Hancock (1699-1776) was of the same Lexington branch and a cousin of the governor's father.

May 14, 1765, Walter Russell and Isaac Mallet were elected to the board, the former for the Alewife Brook school, the latter for the one at Gardner Row. Mr. Mallet served three years, and was succeeded, May, 1768, by John Lamson, who continued in office for five years. In 1773 Mr. Fosdick was serving in his place, but that year it was decided to do away with a local committee, and it was voted "that the selectmen manage the school without the Neck, and proportion the money among the inhabitants as they shall judge equitable."

Lamson is another good old Charlestown name. Joseph Lamson (1728-1789) and John Lamson (1732-1759), according to Wyman, were cousins. The same authority makes the erroneous statement that the former was schoolmaster outside the Neck in 1769 and 1772. All the gentlemen thus far named in this paper served with Samuel Kent during his long and faithful term of nineteen years in the Milk Row district.

Walter Russell's name occurs on the town books in connection with school matters, excepting the years 1771 and 1772, for thirteen years from the time of his first election. In 1778 he was succeeded by his brother, Philemon Russell.

Lieutenant Samuel Cutter was serving in 1771 and 1772, and again in 1781 and 1782. This gentleman (see Cutter Genealogy, p. 54), a man of prominence in the Menotomy district, was the grandfather of Edward and Fitch Cutter, whose names figure on the early records of Somerville. The name of Mallet is precious to Somerville for its associations with the old Mill, or Powder House.

Miss Carr, in her excellent monograph on the family (Historic Leaves, Vol. II., p. 10), has been led into an error concerning the above-mentioned Isaac Mallet by her authorities, Frothingham and Wyman. In saying that he taught school at the Neck in 1767, they make two mistakes. In the first place, there was no school at the Neck in those days, and, secondly, the record distinctly says, under date of April 6, 1767, that Isaac Mallet received £8 10s 4d as his proportion of the school money



(for the district which he was representing as committeeman). If further proof of this and similar misstatements be necessary, we need but consider that Mr. Mallet was forty years of age at this time, a man of means and influence, and was holding various town offices of importance. The writer believes he is correct in affirming that, as a general thing, male teachers in these out-lying districts at this time, as well as long afterwards, were young men, many of them graduates or students of the college near by, who were but "feeling their way" before the real battle of life was to begin.

The above-named Walter Russell, son of Joseph, whom we have mentioned (Vol. III., p. 18) as teaching school in 1724, not only served on the committee, but was a worthy follower of his father in wielding the ferule. The first date we are sure of is May 2, 1774, when he received an order for his amount for keeping part of the school without the Neck, £8, and his associate at the Gardner Row school, Daniel Reed, under same date, received £5 6s 8d as his amount "for keeping another part of the school." January 26, 1776, Edward Gardner is allowed the same sum for keeping this school, and Walter Russell £8 6s for keeping the one at Alewife Brook. These dates prove to us that these schools were not closed, at least for any length of time, during the excitement which prevailed after the battle of Bunker Hill, when old Charlestown lay in ashes. Daniel Reed was the representative of a family that for several generations lived at the upper end of Charlestown, near the ponds. He was, perhaps, the son or grandson of Daniel and Mary (Converse) Reed; the son was born February 19, 1732.

In February, 1778, Walter Russell was acting as town clerk, a position which he did not hold long, as, May 20, 1779, we read that Samuel Swan was serving in that capacity. The last time we find Mr. Russell's name associated with school affairs was in 1780 (already referred to as the year of greatly-inflated values), when the district under his management received £317 8s 6d of the £6,400 appropriated for schools!

Walter Russell, son of Joseph and Mary (Robbins) Russell, was born January 24, 1737, and died at the early age of forty-



five, March 5, 1782. For his second wife, the mother of his children, he married Hannah Adams (Historic Leaves, Vol. III., p. 89). Dr. Paige, the historian of Cambridge, says that Joseph Russell, the father, lived on the north side of the main road in Menotomy, on the first estate west from the river (Alewife brook), but in 1730 exchanged estates with Captain Samuel Whittemore, and removed into the borders of Charlestown, now Somerville, where his home was on the road leading to Winter Hill. The ancient homestead of this branch of the Russell family was destroyed by fire not many years ago. Its site, on the easterly corner of North street and Broadway, is marked by a well and an old pump, which is still standing.

About the time Edward Gardner was teaching in his home district, others of his name renewed a family interest in the school by accepting positions on the school board. As early as 1738 (Vol. III., p. 16), Henry Gardner was a member of the local committee outside the Neck, and for five consecutive years previous to May, 1753, was serving his district. October 10, 1776, Samuel Gardner was serving in this capacity, and his name is found upon the records every year, I believe, up to 1782.

In August, 1779, Philemon Russell received £18, and June, 1780, Edward Gardner, £14 19s 6d (probably for teaching in their respective districts, as Samuel Gardner and Amos Warren were on the school board at the time). Edward Gardner in 1782, and as late as 1786, served on the committee, and Mr. Russell's name occurs in the same connection, year by year, to the end of the period which we are considering. Another teacher, in one or the other of these districts, was James Gardner, who received, through Collector Hawkins, pay for his services, August, 1786.

We have mentioned the name of Amos Warren. He was serving in 1779, and again in 1784. August 3, 1784, Amos Warren and Samuel Gardner are allowed to keep tavern.

We are justified in concluding that, previous to 1786, there was no public school building in these two districts. Several references to private quarters that were hired for school purposes are found upon the town records.



December 6, 1781. "Voted that the school at the upper end of the town be placed at Mr. Samuel Swan's, he to board the master at six shillings per week, and find a room for the school."

Voted to give Samuel Gardner five shillings a week to board Ruth Jones to December, 1785 (see *Historic Leaves*, Vol. III., p. 68).

December 14, 1785. "The school kept at Phebe Russell's received £8 8s."

May 4, 1785. "Voted to give Coll. N. Hawkins for school kept at John Swan's £10 16s."

In the warrant (February 28, 1785) for the coming town meeting, we find the following: "To know the minds of the town, what they will do with regard to two petitions presented by the people at the upper end of the town requesting that one or two schoolhouses may be built there." March 7 it was voted that two schools be built agreeably to this petition. The committee appointed for this purpose were "Mr. Samuel Gardiner, Mr. William Whittemore, Coll. Nathaniel Hawkins, Lieut. Samuel Cutter, and Mr. Seth Wyman." These gentlemen seem to have attended promptly to their duty, for May 1, 1786, it was voted to allow Captain Cordis's account for building the schoolhouses without the Neck, £80. The following November Messrs. Whittemore and Philemon Russell were empowered to lay a floor, make seats, and lay a hearth at the Russell's school. We believe this was the first time in the history of Charlestown that a school building was designated, although unofficially, by the name of a person or family. A few references to these schools, though trifling, may not be out of place.

June 3, 1788, Mr. Russell receives an order for work at the school, £2 9s 10d, and Seth Wyman for wood, £1 12s. In October Mr. Whittemore's bill for work at the school amounted to £3 5s 6d. April 4, 1791, Mr. Russell's bill for cutting and carting wood to the school No. 3 and repairs amounts to £2 19s. The next April, for furnishing three and one-half cords of wood to their respective schools, Mr. Russell receives £3 9s, and Mr. Wyman £4 4s. This makes the price of wood (delivered), in the time of our first president, from five to six dollars per cord.



January 5, 1789: "Voted that the school money for the past year be divided according to the taxes, and that Nathaniel Hawkins, Samuel Swan, Esq., and Philemon Russell be a committee to make division accordingly. Benjamin Hurd, Jr., & Seth Wyman were added to this committee."

October 19, 1789. "Voted that Coll. Hawkins, Philemon Russell, and Seth Wyman provide masters for the schools outside the Neck."

Philemon Russell, youngest son of Joseph, and brother of Walter Russell, was born August 1, 1740, and married June 28, 1764, Elizabeth Wyman, who survived her husband many years, and died in 1825. The many references we have made to his name show that he was active in town affairs, and particularly interested in the schools. We shall have occasion to refer to him and his son, Philemon R. Russell, in our next period. He was licensed as a victualler, was employed by the town as a surveyor, and lived in the house which stood on the spot where his grandson, Levi Russell, erected a more modern structure, which is now owned by the city of Somerville. Mr. Russell died in 1797. His will, dated May 27, was probated June 7 of that year.

Our notes on the name of Gardner are exceedingly meagre for a family of so much prominence. It seems to have started in Woburn. Richard Gardner, of that town, and his son Henry were the grandfather and father, respectively, of Henry (1698-1763), who lived at the upper end of Charlestown. His brother was the Rev. John Gardner, of Stowe. By his wife Lucy, daughter of John Fowle, he had five sons, Edward, Samuel, John, Henry, and James.

Edward Gardner, born in Charlestown March, 1739, married Mehitable Blodgett, of Lexington, and died January 23, 1806. It was he whose name figures in these pages. His brother Samuel, born 1741, died at the age of fifty. He, also, as we have attempted to show, rendered valuable service to his section of the town. James, the youngest son of Henry Gardner, according to the family genealogist, graduated from Harvard College, and was long located at Lynn as a physician, where he died in 1831.



By way of recapitulation, we add the following table, which is a continuation of the one on page 16, Vol. III. The larger sum was the whole amount appropriated for schools; the less sum the amount devoted to schools beyond the Neck.

Committee of management for the schools outside the Neck:—

May 13, 1754, Nathaniel Francis, Samuel Kent, Joseph Phipps; £180; £24.

May, 1755, and May, 1756, Samuel Kent, Joseph Phipps, Henry Putnam (same amounts).

May 10, 1757, Samuel Kent, Henry Putnam, James Fos-dick (same amounts).

May, 1758, and May, 1759, Samuel Kent, Henry Putnam, Captain John Hancock (same amounts).

May, 1760, '61, '62, '63, '64, Samuel Kent, Henry Putnam, Joseph Lamson; £180; £25 6s 8d.

May, 1765, '66, '67, Isaac Mallet, Samuel Kent, Walter Rus-sell; £180; £34 10s.

May, 1768, '69, '70, Samuel Kent, John Lamson, Walter Russell (same amounts).

May, 1771, and May, 1772, Peter Tufts, Jr., John Lamson, Lieutenant Samuel Cutter (same amounts).

May, 1773, '74, '75. The selectmen, a committee for the schools within and without the Neck.

1776, '77, John Hay, Timothy Tufts, Walter Russell, Samuel Gardner; £60 (for all the schools).

May 11, 1778, Caleb Call, Samuel Tufts, Samuel Gardner, Philemon Russell; £140 (for all the schools).

May 20, 1779, Samuel Tufts, Samuel Gardner, Amos Warren; £500 (for all the schools).

[Committee within the Neck, Nathaniel Gorham, Eben Breed, David Wood.]

May 8, 1780. "The selectmen, with Samuel Gardner, a committee to regulate the schools"; £6,400 (£400, l. m.).

1781. The selectmen and Lieutenant Samuel Cutter a com-mittee for the schools.

"Voted that Hon. Nathaniel Gorham be a committee to raise £100 for the support of the schools."



May 6, 1782. The selectmen and Edward Gardner; £120 (for all the schools).

May 12, 1783 (outside), Timothy Tufts, Philemon Russell, Amos Warren; £125 (for all schools).

May 10, 1784, the selectmen (same amount).

May 4, 1785, the selectmen; £180 (for all schools).

May 15, 1786, the selectmen and Seth Wyman; £185 (for all schools).

May, 1787, the selectmen, Seth Wyman, William Whittemore (same amount).

May 26, 1788, the selectmen, Philemon Russell, Seth Wyman; £150 (for all schools).

May 14, 1789, the selectmen, Philemon Russell (same amount); Milk Row, £31 2s 8d; Alewife Brook, £14 17s 2d; Gardner Row, £14 18s 10d.

May, 1790, '91, same committee; £150, "exclusive of the income of the school fund."

May 14, 1792, the selectmen, Richard Devens, Samuel Dexter, Philemon Russell, Seth Wyman; £225, "including the school fund."

Apportioned February, 1793, for the year preceding, Milk Row, £41; Alewife Brook, £20; Gardner Row, £20.



## THE OLD ROYALL HOUSE, MEDFORD

By Charles D. Elliot

The celebration of the 275th anniversary of the founding of Medford brought with it the organization of a society for the purchase and restoration of the ancient Royall mansion, now the headquarters of the Medford Daughters of the Revolution; its four and one-third acres having been lotted and placed on sale by its owner.

The old house was built some two centuries ago. Isaac Royall, a merchant from Antigua, afterwards bought it, probably about 1737, and remodeled it after an English mansion in Antigua, from whence he brought with him twenty-seven slaves, whose old brick quarters, with its huge fireplace, is probably the last existing vestige of slavery in Massachusetts.

Colonel Isaac Royall, Jr., son of the merchant, was a Loyalist, and at the breaking out of the Revolution went to England, leaving for disposal by his agents, among other "chattels," his slaves Stephen, George, Hagar, Mira, Betsey, and Nancy, probably among the last owned or kept in these parts.

Colonel Royall endowed Harvard College with 2,000 acres of land, founding thereby the "Royall" professorship of law, which was the beginning of the present Harvard Law School.

This ancient Royall estate was once part of Governor Winthrop's Ten Hills Farm, and was then part of Charlestown. In the Revolution the old mansion was for a time the headquarters of General Charles Lee, who afterwards moved to the old Oliver Tufts house; while Lee had the Royall mansion, it was facetiously named Hobgoblin Hall.

It is a relic all are interested in preserving, and it is believed and hoped that this society will succeed in purchasing and restoring this historic place, which was during the last century considered one of the "grandest mansions in Massachusetts."



# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Florence E. Carr
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot	Anna P. Vinal	L. Roger Wentworth
-------------------	---------------	--------------------

## Committee on Historic Sites

J. O. Hayden, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot	Edward Glines
------------------------	-------------------	---------------

## Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot
W. E. Brigham	Seth Mason

Mrs. J. F. Ayer

## Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman	Edith Hayes	Mrs. Helen Heald
----------------------------	-------------	------------------

## Photographs

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman	James F. Whitney
	Albert L. Haskell

## Press and Clippings

W. P. Jones, Chairman	Anna P. Vinal
Mrs. Emma Prichard Hadley	Lucy M. Stone

## Committee on Publications

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman	Frank M. Hawes
Sara A. Stone	Samuel Earle

## Military Records

J. H. Dusseault, Chairman	Alfred M. Cutler	Mary A. Haley
---------------------------	------------------	---------------

## House

Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman	Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham	Mrs. E. F. Hammond
---------------------------	-----------------------	--------------------

## Hospitality

Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury
	Mrs. Mae D. Frazar



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

July, 1905.

Vol. IV

No. 2



## CONTENTS

PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN	Levi Lincoln, Jr.	25
CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1793	Frank M. Miller, Jr.	39
NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NUMBER 8	Joseph H. Clark	47

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM. WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL PARKER



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. IV.

JULY, 1905

No. 2

---

## PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN

By Levi Lindley Hawes

About 12 o'clock one August night in 1862, as I sat in my tent at Fort Jackson, La., making out a Post Return—or perhaps writing to "the girl I left behind me"—I was interrupted by the quiet entrance of the commandant. "Ye gods! what do I see?" I exclaimed; as the lieutenant-colonel stood before me in full evening (or night) dress. "I thought you were asleep hours ago." "I have been asleep," he replied, "but when I awoke and saw a light in your tent, I said to myself, this 'witching hour of night' is a proper time for me to ask Levi what prompted or induced him to enter the service. You, an only son, left a delightful, happy home,—I simply left the state of Maine. Why did you enlist in the military service?" After an hour's friendly chat, I think the colonel retired in the firm conviction that I had a valid reason for connecting myself as sergeant in company I, Thirteenth Maine Regiment Infantry. With varied phraseology this pertinent question has been fired at me scores of times. In this connection permit me to read extracts from two letters written in September, 1861.

(Extract.)

Bangor, Me., September 7, 1861.

My dear Levi: You seem to think it is your duty to go into the army, and by what you write I judge that you have decided to go. Well, go, if you think you can endure the exposure and hardships of camp life; and may God bless you in all your endeavors to serve our country, and give you health, strength, and ability equal to your calling. If you do enter your country's service, attach yourself to a cavalry squadron, by all means. I



send you a paper to call your attention to the notice of a company which is to be recruited in Maine; and you will see that it is more advantageous to enlist here than in Massachusetts. If you wish to obtain a situation in this company, you had better apply at once. Let the store go.

Please write very soon, if you do not come home, for I shall feel anxious to hear how you succeed in enlisting.

Mother.

(Extract.)

Boston, September 10, 1861.

My dear Mother: Your letter of the 7th inst. received this noon has filled my heart with joy.

A thousand thanks for such words as these—words both of consent and blessing. I surely have no desire to bathe my hands in my brother's blood, but when he madly threatens to destroy, not only me, but also the entire family—having used every other means to dissuade him from his cruel purpose in vain—shall I fail or refuse to bring forward the last and most potent argument—the sword—in self-defence? God forbid. If I perish, let it be said that I died in the faithful discharge of my duty. Duty is my war-cry; but having unsheathed my sword, I shall throw away the scabbard; and when my duty is completely done, I will bury the sword. It does seem to me that it is my duty to offer my services to my country; and, God helping me, I will never disgrace my more than Spartan mother. My whole soul cries "go." You say "go." And does not the providence of God indicate that it is my duty to rally for the strife?

Oh, the terrible, the three terrible necessity! But it must be met.

Yours affectionately,

Levi.

But there is a long gap between this period and the beginning of my history.

In 1833 two notable events occurred. First, the Anti-Slavery Society was born. Then, according to the record—which I have been assured is absolutely correct—a boy was born in the town of Union, Me., Lincoln county (now Knox), adjoin-



ing Hope, adjoining Liberty, and in process of time this boy necessarily became, in the man, a hopeful union, Lincoln, liberty-loving, American citizen.

On that April day, when a gun-carriage went rumbling past my store, corner Beacon and Tremont streets, bearing the bodies of Ladd and Whitney, killed in Baltimore, I recorded a vow. As soon thereafter as possible, I turned the key on my mercantile business, and on the twenty-first day of October, 1861, my name was writ large on the enlistment roll; and from that date my time and means were devoted to the business of inducing men to enlist in the Thirteenth Maine Regiment, which was to be attached to General Butler's division for special service,—until the regiment was mustered into the United States service at the arsenal in Augusta,—December 31, 1861. Here we lived in tents half buried in snow, often drilling in snow knee deep, with the mercury at or below zero, till February 18, 1862, at which date we dug ourselves out of several feet of snow and ice and took train for Boston. About midnight we found ourselves in the "Cradle of Liberty," where, it was supposed, we were to be rocked to sleep, but I don't remember to have seen a single sleeping soldier that night. On the twentieth a battalion of the regiment (four companies) (Colonel Dow and Major Hesseltine) was marched to Long wharf and down between decks of the good steamship Mississippi, in which for many days and nights we were literally rocked to sleep. (The six companies of the regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Rust commanding, sailed from New York.) The next day our voyage began, and before it ended the boys experienced all the charms of "life on the ocean wave, and a home on the rolling deep." As we rolled and pitched on the passage to Fort Monroe, many a luckless soldier went skating down the icy deck till the lee bulwarks ordered a peremptory halt. The order to halt was not always obeyed with such alacrity. At Fort Monroe we received General Butler and staff. We had previously discovered that the Thirty-first Massachusetts Regiment was stowed somewhere down forward.

At 10 o'clock p. m. on the twenty-fifth, the engines began to throb, and shortly the capes were left astern. Our final (?)



departure was taken, and Ship Island was announced as our destination.

About 7 o'clock p. m. on the twenty-sixth I was standing in the lee of the pilot house, greatly interested in the tumbling of a ragged sea. Suddenly, through the gloom, I thought I saw "white water" on our starboard bow, and I said to the sergeant who stood near me, "We are in the midst of breakers," and putting my hands to my mouth, sailor fashion, I shouted, "Breakers!" Looking through the pilot house window, I saw the quartermaster throwing his wheel to starboard. Had he not started his wheel when he did, these lines would not have been written; for it was a moment later that the captain from the fore rigging bawled first, "Hard a-port," then, "Hard a-starboard." As the ship came about she fell into the trough of the sea, and for a short time, which seemed an age, she was practically on her beam ends. The sergeant vanished as if by magic. "Man overboard" trembled on my lips, but I checked myself, realizing the futility of raising an alarm at that juncture. Wiping the brine from my eyes with my sleeve, I discovered something in the lee scuppers. Edging down carefully I seized it; whereupon a voice called out as well as it could through a bit of the Atlantic Ocean that had taken refuge in his mouth, "That's my hair." "God bless you, sergeant," I said, "are you hurt?" "No," he said, "but I am nearly drowned." "Well, now go below," I said, "and be a good boy." He went. An hour later we had a full grown gale bellowing after us, and I remained on deck to watch the splendid behavior of the ship and to listen to the full chorus which seemed to be performing for my special benefit. A gale at sea always sends me to the key of G. Finally, chilled to the marrow, I had to yield to the blast and go below. As I stepped down between decks, behold a whole menagerie in full voice. Every conceivable sound proceeded from hundreds of sick and scared soldiers. Hanging my dripping clothes where I hoped they would dry over night, I flung myself into the bunk already occupied by four somewhat demoralized sergeants, thus adding one more specimen to the "floating show." The motion of the ship soon lulled me into a sixteen-knot sleep, from which



I was aroused by a motion not of the ship, and a hoarse whisper in my ear: "Turn out, you are wanted in the cabin. The skylight is stove in and the cabin is flooded, and the water is up nearly to the grating in the boiler room. It is four o'clock, and the devil to pay generally."

The occasion didn't seem to demand an elaborate toilet, so in the pitchy night I quickly groped my way to the cabin, and as I stepped from the companion-way into the swirling suds that swished half way up the bulkhead, the scene struck me as indescribably funny.

Officers sat about the table looking as though they had lost their best friend. Saluting, I said (unwisely, no doubt), "Gentlemen, this looks very much like a fashionable watering-place." Whereupon one with somewhat of cant in his tone said, "This is no time for frivolity or jesting."

Looking at the chevron on my sleeve, I made no audible reply, but to the bucket bearers I said, *sotto voce*, "They are in for how long?" "Well, we will bail them out, anyway," at which a broad smile broke out and went echoing down the cabin; and then we all "turned to," each one steering his own bucket. An hour or so later I saw my frivolous friend making for the stairs. "After you, sir," rose to my lips, and halted there, while I preceded him up the winding stairs, letting my bucket, as the ship rolled, steer itself. As I reached the deck the orderly looked in my bucket and asked, "Where is your water?" "In the chaplain's starboard boot—will explain later," I replied.

At sea, accidents sometimes occur in pairs or in sets. When I returned to the cabin I found a dapper little lieutenant issuing orders—forgetting that he was not commander-in-chief of the army and navy. I stood at attention, and was about to quote a passage from an ancient volume, for I knew something was going to happen. Just then a sea struck the ship under the counter, lifted her endwise, and dropped her so suddenly that the would-be commander sat down, in his best clothes, in the not over-clean water. I turned my head to wipe away tears—or was it the dirty water he had splashed in my face?—and then sympathetically remarked, "You have dropped something, sir." He



disappeared so quickly that I failed to get more than a mental photograph of the young son of Mars, and the water closed over a stern reality.

At eight o'clock, after four hours' bailing, we were relieved and treated to a breakfast fit for the gods. As I presented my tin cup and plate to the black knight at the galley, he poured half a pint of coffee into my cup and deposited one boiled potato in the centre of my ten-inch plate—sans salt, sans pepper, sans everything. I declare, on the honor of a soldier, that I never before saw a boiled potato look so utterly lonesome. I think that I made a remark to that effect at the time, for the darkey seemed amused, and when I told him to keep his black hand out of my new tin plate he opened his mouth to such an extent that his ears were in eclipse.

My breakfast disposed of, I went on deck and deposited myself in a huge coil of six-inch hawser on the after part of the quarter-deck, where for hours—and alone—I watched the mighty combers which, as yet, had not tumbled aboard to any great damage. Suddenly the door of the after house flew open, and out shot my captain. Righting himself, he said, "Sergeant, you must not sit there, it is dangerous. The field gun lashed to the rail near where you are sitting was washed overboard last night." I thanked him for his kind warning, adding that I was not a loaded field piece, and I didn't purpose to go off after that fashion. Meanwhile, I was watching a tremendous comber making toward the starboard quarter. Pointing in that direction, I said, "Captain, that fellow means mischief, and you had better seek shelter." He took the hint. As the lawless comber with a thundering roar broke over the deck, I instinctively seized the topmost flakes of the coil with both hands. After the tons of the North Atlantic had left the deck and gone back to its own, I found myself jammed into that coil doubled up like a jack-knife with feet and hands sticking through different parts of the mass of nearly wrecked cordage. I knew something had happened, but which was Hawes and which was hawser I was too badly twisted and tangled to determine. "What would my mother think of me now?" I soliloquized. By dint of vigorous kicking,



wriggling, clawing, and sundry other manoeuvres I shuffled that hempen coil, and finding that I was not *Hawes de combat*, nor my zeal dampened (but with some loss of dignity as a soldier), I went in search of less tight fitting and clinging garments. Of the 1,500 soldiers aboard, not a soul of them knew anything of the circus I had had.

The next morning came in with a cloudless sky, the ship on an even keel, on a glassy sea. As I went forward I looked over the rail and noticed that the water had a peculiar color. To Sergeant Simmons, who was to be my guest at the galley, I said: "We are in shoal water," and looking ahead, added, "and we are shoaling fast. We shall be aground in less than five minutes. However, let us make sure of our potatoes." As we went below I heard the gong sound in the engine room, and at that instant the ship came to a full stop, but without a perceptible jar, on Frying-Pan Shoals—and within the five minutes specified. Adequately to describe our experience during the eleven hours we were stranded on the worst coast of the United States would take more time than this occasion affords or your patience would allow. I have been on the rocks off an inhospitable coast of South America, and on a lee shore elsewhere, but perhaps this was the most trying situation of all, because in this case infinitely more was involved. Although the situation seemed desperate I never lost courage for a moment. From my diary I have written out somewhat in detail an account of our experience on Frying-Pan Shoals; but to-night I can give you only a glimpse of what stared us in the face on that twenty-eighth day of February, 1862.

Of course I had but a superficial knowledge of our surroundings, but the school had been opened and I was in the mood to put myself in training. To my amazement I found that the port anchor had been let go, notwithstanding the fact that that end of the ship was already stuck fast in the mud. As General Butler came on deck he asked the captain, "What's that?" pointing to the flag, Union down, in the port fore rigging. "Flag of distress," said the skipper. "Can you display it nowhere else?" asked the general. "Yes, at the mizzen peak," re-



plied the skipper. "Half-mast it at the mizzen peak, Union up, forever!" roared the general. Then a signal gun was fired, but this was immediately muzzled, for Fort Macon and horsemen were in plain sight from our deck. All the troops were immediately ordered to go below. I recognized the wisdom of the order, but I concluded that it didn't include me. So I ranged alongside the ship's quartermaster, who at once adopted me as his assistant; and it proved to be the longest watch on deck that I ever experienced,—from 8 o'clock A. M., till about 8 o'clock P. M.

It was soon discovered that the good ship had resented the indignity of dropping the anchor under her forefoot by rolling over onto it and forcing a fluke through her iron bow. At this hour we had only fourteen feet of water forward, while the ship drew about eighteen feet, and the tide was falling. But as the water fell outside it continued to rise in the forward compartment, till the Thirty-first Massachusetts boys had the choice of being drowned in an iron kettle or vacating their quarters. No deaths by drowning were reported.

Doubtless General Butler comprehended the gravity of the situation, but he was outwardly cool and collected during the entire day, and actively in command.

To arouse the ship from her siesta various expedients were resorted to. Orders were issued to jettison some of the heavier cargo. Among the first things I noticed going overboard were mosquito netting and camp and garrison equipage. In this connection the acting quartermaster of the expedition cut a sorry figure. Seated on the "booby hatch," with his mouth full of oaths, flourishing a revolver and threatening to shoot, this officer was supposed to be executing orders. While I had no connection with his squad I was a witness of what was being done on that part of the ship. Finally a barrel got jammed in the hatch. The air was blue with oaths, and I noticed some of the men edging away from the flourishing pistol. I could stand the pressure no longer. Seizing a capstan bar I stepped to the hatch and said, "Lower a bit," then, canting the barrel, said "Hoist," and the situation was relieved. To the disgust of the



officer some one cried, "Bully for the sergeant." Spluttering oaths the officer turned on me, and, pointing his pistol threateningly, demanded if I belonged to that squad. I looked him square in the face for a moment, and then said, perhaps with more emphasis than my rank would fairly warrant, "No, sir," then pointing to his pistol, added, "but that is no good." To his credit be it said the pistol-bearer quieted down, and the pistol was not in evidence during the rest of the day. As I turned away my colonel laid his hand on my shoulder, saying, "Sergeant, I'm glad to see you here. That's a miserable fellow." I know I was terribly angry at the wretch; but the kind words of my colonel relieved the tension.

After some hours a steamer was made out coming up the coast. Her progress was closely watched. The stars and stripes floated from her peak, but she might be a rebel gun-boat for all that. As she rounded to at a distance and headed for us a boat was called away with an officer in charge to ascertain the nationality of the ship. She proved to be the United States gun-boat Mount Vernon, on blockade duty off Cape Fear river. She had fortunately seen the flash of our gun, but was too far off to hear the report, and immediately started to investigate. Imagination alone can picture forth our feelings of relief at having a United States gun-boat between us and the rebel fort at the mouth of Cape Fear river—not to mention the rising wind and muttering sea, which would soon reduce the good ship Mississippi to a scrap heap unless relieved at flood tide. Captain Glisson of the Mt. Vernon shook his head as hawser after hawser parted in his efforts to pull us off. "You have, perhaps, one chance in a million," said the captain, "to float your ship." To save his own ship he was obliged to haul off to deeper water, for he had touched bottom several times. Meanwhile our engine was working full steam ahead. The quartermaster and I were forward charged with heaving the lead. As a precaution troops were being transferred to the Mt. Vernon, for there was slight expectation of saving our ship. Just here the quartermaster said, "Sergeant, I've got to go aft; look out for falling spars as the ship rolls." When he returned, he said the Maine troops



were being sent to the gun-boat, but he had obtained my colonel's consent, and would I remain and take the one chance,—“We need you—for, if we don't get off this tide, good-by Mississippi.” I simply said “I'll stick.” A little later he said, “I wish you would take the lead again, you have a more sensitive touch.” My heart gave a big thump as I felt the lead trail aft just a bit. As with tense nerves I watched the lead-line, the General, apparently thinking I had fallen asleep, or was idling, yelled, “Keep that lead a-going.” Turning to the quartermaster, I said, with as steady voice as I could command, “She forges ahead, sir.” “Are you sure?” he asked. “Sure,” I replied. Then he repeated my report to the quarter-deck, which report brought cheers from every mouth and tears from many eyes. The boats were recalled, and, on account of the heavy sea, were with great difficulty hoisted aboard.

A few hours later, piloted by the Mt. Vernon, we let go our anchor near the mouth of the Cape Fear river.

The next morning we took a sailing-master from the Mt. Vernon and laid our course for Port Royal (Hilton Head), where we arrived March 2 with our forward compartment full of water, and the ship badly “by the head.” The next day we hauled around to Seabrook Landing, about eight miles from Hilton Head, and disembarked. The first night we were quartered in a cotton shed, pole floor, and it is my belief that we suffered more from cold than we ever did in Augusta, and the poles were the knottiest and crookedest that ever grew upright. Our flesh was torn as well as our clothes. A wag had “For rent” pinned to the tail of his coat. I didn't need a placard, but rather needle and thread and court-plaster.

Our battalion was moved out about half a mile from the landing on the road to Hilton Head, to serve as picket guard. We pitched our tents in a cotton field; and here I had my first experience as a Southern field-hand, from which duty I was detailed to serve as sergeant of the guard. Soon the rumor spread through the camp that the rebels were in force between our position and the Savannah river, and I detected a nervousness on the part of some of the guard. Early in the afternoon the officer



of the day said he was sick, and, as all the other officers were on duty at the landing, he would turn over the command of the guard to me. (A year later he acknowledged that he was scared, not sick.)

As the officer of the day disappeared a staff officer dashed into our camp and inquired for Sergeant Hawes. Presenting myself, the officer said, "The general's compliments, and he orders that you report forthwith at headquarters as a witness before a court of inquiry." It would seem that my first sighting the breakers before spoken of, and also my observing and remarking on the shoaling of the water on Frying-Pan Shoals, had been reported to the general. Hence my summons. There was no cross-examination in my case; and when the president said, "Thank you, sergeant, that's all," I felt relieved; for I could never tell a story twice alike. As I left the court I met the ship's quartermaster, who asked me, "How near to the breakers were we on the night of the gale? I have just testified that we were within one ship's length." "In my judgment," I said, "we were within two ship's length, and I so stated to the court."

Soon after returning to my post I saw the head of a column of troops debouching from the woods about a mile to the front of our position. I had not been notified of any contemplated movement of troops, but I soon satisfied myself that in the "go-as-you-please" gait of the advancing troops there was union of action. The guard took arms. As the head of the column approached the sentinel challenged. Strange to say the challenge was ignored by the colonel. Whereupon I immediately threw my guard across his front and every musket was brought to a ready. By this time the colonel apparently had a suspicion that I knew my duty, if for the moment he had forgotten his, for he halted his regiment, and then advanced and gave the countersign, apologized for his seeming courtesy, and asked me to pass his stragglers, who would come later. Suffice it to say, that when this episode was reported at headquarters the sergeant did not receive a reprimand for any dereliction of duty.

Our picket line extended into a dense oak wood, and as I made the "rounds" at night I frequently heard the sharp click of



the musket as it was brought to a full cock, the sentinel being too scared to challenge, and I was obliged to announce my approach to the challenge of the click.

One of the scared sentinels said afterwards that he guessed I was the only one that night in danger of being shot.

On the ninth of March (a notable day in my calendar) we struck tents and embarked on the steamship *Matanzas*, the general deeming it wise to transfer the Thirty-first regiment to our quarters on the Mississippi lest the hastily patched bow should break adrift and endanger the lives of those in the forward compartment. Our seven days' run ashore was a blessing somewhat disguised.

The next morning we hauled around to Hilton Head and anchored to await the *Mississippi*, which had experienced additional trouble. At high noon on the thirteenth both ships "beat to quarters," and we resumed our voyage.

On the seventh day from Hilton Head, after suffering the tortures of the damned from both hunger and thirst (from the details of which, good Lord deliver us), a gun-boat hove to across our bow, and ascertaining that ours was a troop ship bound for Ship Island, informed us that we were within five hours' sail of our long-sought-for port.

Every soldier gave voice to his feelings, and then "piped down" to pack knapsacks. We forgot that our throats were parched and that our stomachs were in a collapsed condition. (Blessing on the man who invented forgetfulness.)

Four hundred pairs of eyes were shortly on the lookout for Ship Island. By and by masts appeared, and then the hulls came into view, but not the slightest indication of land. Vessels only—apparently in mid-ocean. To see vessels rising apparently out of the water was a novel sight to some of the boys. But when they discovered the low-lying island almost under our jib-boom their astonishment was complete. At 3 o'clock P. M., March 20, we dropped anchor within a cable's length of the Mississippi, which had arrived a day or two in advance of us. Our comrades who had sailed from New York had arrived while we were stranded at Hilton Head, and as we came to anchor gave us



hearty cheers from the shore, and we returned the greeting with interest, but we had no further communication with them for three days. We had another practical illustration of the fact that doubtful things are very uncertain. A northerly gale kicked up such an ugly surf that we couldn't land till late in the afternoon of the twenty-second, when we literally staggered ashore. An officer of a Maine battery captured me and took me to his quarters and gave me a square meal and a good bed, and for twelve solid hours I forgot that I was a soldier. After an 8 o'clock substantial breakfast I reported for duty with my company; and on the whole I was glad that I was alive.

Before I left the ship the captain said to me that he never before saw so fine a body of men. "Why," said he, "they have a right to mutiny. I would consider it a religious duty to lead a mutiny on far less provocation than they have. They have been in a starving condition for days, and yet not one breach of discipline has come to my knowledge."

Ship Island—chiefly barren sand—is about six miles long, and perhaps half a mile wide at its widest part, and rises only a few feet above the sea. The troops were encamped at the western end of the island. The extreme eastern end is somewhat more elevated, and at the time of our arrival a growth of pines served for both fuel and timber. During heavy gales the larger part of the island was actually under water. On this nearly submerged sand bank the Thirteenth Maine drew for consolation for more than three months. But there was no lack of employment. To our military duties was added excessive fatigue duty day and night, for all transports discharged their cargo at this rendezvous.

(To be continued.)



## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1793

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

Since our reference to Samuel Holbrook, schoolmaster of Charlestown (Vol. III., p. 68) an interesting article has appeared in the New England Genealogical Register, Vol. 58, p. 308, which informs us that he was born in Boston, 1729, the son of Abiah and Mary (Needham) Holbrook. His eldest brother, Abiah, Jr., was a distinguished schoolmaster of Boston, from 1741 to his death in 1768 or 1769. Samuel began to teach in 1745 as his brother's assistant, and in 1750 was receiving a salary of £50 as usher of the South Writing School. In 1769 he succeeded his brother as master of this school, at a salary of £100. In 1770 one Thomas Parker complained that Master Holbrook had given his son an unreasonable correction, but apparently no action was taken. In 1776 Mr. Holbrook received an extra £80 on account of the high cost of living, and in 1777 he was allowed £100 for the same reason. He seems to have continued his work in Boston until 1782.

The Memorial History of Boston says: "Samuel Holbrook, the schoolmaster, was Town Clerk of Charlestown, 1783." There must be some mistake in the date of his death, July 24, 1784, as the Charlestown records speak of him as late as March 5, 1787, when he was still living. His successor, Samuel Payson, was at the head of the town school in 1788. June 1 and November 12 of that year he received his quarter's salary, in the last instance £27 15s 0d. December 7, 1792, "The committee appointed upon memorial of Mr. Payson, the schoolmaster, have attended and find Mr. Payson has lost £50 in consequence of being obliged to sell his warrants for less than their nominal value in order to subsist himself and family. They report it is just and proper that the town make good the deficiency." Mr. Payson probably continued to serve as town clerk until his resignation from the school, some time in 1800. Samuel Payson, perhaps a graduate of Harvard College, class of 1782, according to Wyman, was in the census of 1789, and came from Chelsea in 1787. He married Grace Webb in 1790, and together they reared a



family of children. He became cashier of the Massachusetts Bank, and a trustee of the Charlestown schools in 1802.

During a part of this period George Bartlett appears to have been master of the writing school. Voted, December 6, 1790, that George Bartlett have an order on the treasurer for his bill for ink for the school, 12s 11d. Mr. Bartlett was born October 5, 1760, and was a brother of Hon. Josiah Bartlett, already mentioned. He married Mary Gorham, and one of their family of eight children, Catharine, became the wife of Rev. James Walker, president of Harvard College (Wyman). From 1812 to 1816, inclusive, Mr. Bartlett served on the board of trustees.

December 3, 1792, voted that Mary Rand have an order on the treasurer for her bill for schooling poor children, £1 5s 0d. This item preserves the name of one of the female teachers of that period.

We are now arrived at a time when Charlestown school affairs are to take on a more modern aspect. In accounting for the change, which was a gradual one, we can do no better than to glean from the records. The immediate cause, it would seem, was a financial one.

May 20, 1790. "An examination of the poor's bonds and of the school bonds showed there was a deficiency; to make good the principal in the Bonds belonging to the Schools would require £488 18s 8d, and it was voted that this be made good so that the will of donors may be complied with." Messrs. James Russell, Richard Devens, and Thomas Harris "proposed that a farm in Stoneham, improved by Silas Simonds, and belonging to the town, be appraised and, so far as the sum will go, be taken in part for this deficiency, and that the remainder be taken in real estate or bonds, so that the funds may be kept good."

October 4, 1790, a committee of three, James Russell, Samuel Dexter, and Isaac Mallett, was given "full power to make transfer of the town's farm at Stoneham, so that the fee may rest in the school forever, as they may see fit."

April 4, 1791, "Voted to appoint a committee of seven to consider what further provision is best to be made for the public school and report at the May meeting. The gentlemen appointed were Richard Devens, Esq., Samuel Dexter, Esq., Cap-



tain Thomas Harris, John Larkin, Timothy Thompson, Jr., John Bromfield, and Philemon Russell. They beg leave to report it is their opinion that females be admitted into the public school within the Neck for six months of the year, from May to October, inclusive; that their hours of instruction be from 11 to 1 and 4 to 6, from the age of seven or more. That until nine years they be taught reading and spelling. That after that age they be also taught writing and arithmetic, and that reading from that time be considered as including propriety as to cadence, accent, emphasis, and pauses, and that a sum not exceeding £50 be granted to provide an usher for the six months aforesaid, of which the other schools are to take their due proportion. That a committee of five be appointed to obtain some suitable person for that purpose, and that in order to promote the best interest of the school and excite a laudable ambition in the scholars, the same committee shall for the year ensuing as often at least as once every quarter visit the school to enquire into the proficiency of the scholars, the instruction and discipline of the school, and to advise with the master respecting the same, and that a committee for similar purposes be annually chosen." Voted that the selectmen be the committee to regulate the schools and provide an usher for the school within the Neck for six months. Later it was voted to add Richard Devens, Samuel Dexter, Philemon Russell, and Seth Wyman to this committee.

May 23, 1791, "Voted that Captain Goodwin alter the schoolhouse to accommodate it for an assistant master." The last named committee was re-appointed in May, 1792.

Evidently there was some doubt as to what constituted the school fund. Some claimed that the Common was the property of the school, and proposed as an investment that a house and barn be built thereon to rent as a tavern. A discussion naturally followed, and a committee was appointed to look into the legality of the matter. Later in the year, in a warrant for a town meeting, we read: "To know whether the town will take some measures to place all funds belonging to the schools upon a more advantageous footing than they now are." This is the vote recorded: "That Hon. James Russell, Richard Devens, Esq., and Aaron Putnam, Esq., be a committee on school funds, and



to report at an adjourned meeting the amount of said funds and the best means of placing them at interest, and what the probable income from them will be."

In December this committee reported the school fund to be as follows:—

Farm in Stoneham, prized at .....	£450.
Bonds due from Richard Miller, Jonathan Chapman, and Richard Chapman .....	£70. 0.1
Captain Nathan Adams, William Grubb, and Richard Trumbull .....	£24. 0.2
Captain Benjamin Frothingham .....	£20. 0.6
Lot of land sold to Timothy Wright .....	£119. 0.8
Received of Samuel Swan, Esq., for a lot of land belonging to James Kenney, secured by money borrowed of the school fund .....	£49.12.0
Farm at Stoneham, deficient .....	£38.18.8
A certain pasture in Medford .....	£90. 0.0
Total .....	£861.12.1

To this may be added the commons which it is proposed to rent: notes due from Nicholas Hopping, £51 16s 5d, and from Benjamin Sweetser, £26 0s 0d, but from these nothing is expected. The committee is of the opinion that the income from the funds will amount to £70 per annum. They recommend that a committee be appointed to care for this fund. It was voted to accept this report, "and that the same committee be empowered."

In examining the records the writer must have overlooked the following item, which appears in the Charlestown school report for 1873, where a history of the school fund is given: "March, 1793, voted to sell the common, and that the proceeds be vested in funds for the use of the school."

March 4, 1793, at the town meeting, which adjourned to 3 o'clock in the afternoon, it was moved and carried, that seven trustees be chosen to superintend the schools and the school fund. To the more conservative, and especially to the board of selectmen, this measure may have seemed reactionary in the extreme. For one hundred and sixty years control of all school



matters had been vested in that body. But this was the year of the French Revolution!

The same day it was voted that a committee of three be appointed to apply to the general court to have trustees incorporated to superintend the school and the school funds, who shall be chosen annually. The legislature passed the act March 27, 1793, and Richard Devens, Nathaniel Gorham, Josiah Bartlett, Aaron Putnam, Joseph Hurd, Nathaniel Hawkins, and Seth Wyman constituted the first board of trustees of the Charlestown free schools.

April 18, 1793. The town treasurer was empowered to deliver to Aaron Putnam, Esq., treasurer for the trustees, all the moneys, bonds, notes of hand, etc., being the property of the free schools of Charlestown, that now are or may come into his, the treasurer's, hands.

From this time all proceedings of the Charlestown School Board, up to 1814, were recorded by the secretary in a book, known as Volume I. Unfortunately, this valuable record is supposed to be lost, certainly it cannot now be consulted. The selectmen's books furnish us with the annual amounts appropriated for schools, the names of the trustees as they were elected, and a few other items.

Voted May 6, 1793, to raise £175 for the schools, in addition to the school funds.

May 12, 1794. The proceedings of the trustees of the schools, with a state of their funds, were read in town meeting. This may be called the first Charlestown school report. The same day it was voted to raise £200 for the schools.

May 6, 1795. The second annual report was presented, and the sum of £350 was appropriated for the schools. But what is of more interest to us, it was also "voted to build a schoolhouse in Milk Row," and £100 was appropriated, and if there is any surplus "it is to be disposed of by the trustees at their discretion." The sum named must be construed as generous in the extreme; but the simplicity of the last clause is almost touching. The good fathers of the town were to learn that appropriations for schoolhouses never come out with a surplus. We hear no more of this project until the meeting of May 14,



1798, three years later, when it is voted that the trustees exhibit their account for building the schoolhouse in Milk Row to the selectmen, and if they think it right, that they direct the treasurer to pay them what they have expended more than the original grant for that purpose, and direct the assessors to tax the same.

August 6, '98, voted to approve of Mr. Samuel Tufts' bill for building the schoolhouse in Milk Row, and that the assessors be directed to tax the balance, being \$211.49, agreeably to a vote of the town in May last. This would make the whole cost of this school not far from \$750, or half as much again as the original estimate.

May 1, 1797. After the proceedings of the trustees and their accounts were read and approved by the citizens at town meeting assembled, it was voted to raise \$1,166 for the schools. Thus the old order of things was passing, and we are to hear of pounds, shillings, and pence no more. This was the annual appropriation (or more exactly, \$1,166.66) until 1801. The amount gradually increased until May, 1806, when it reached the sum of \$3,000. It fell off again in 1808 to \$2,000, but by May 14, 1812, again stood at \$3,000. May 3, 1813, the sum voted for school purposes was \$3,500.

The death of George Washington occurred December 14, 1799. The town records of Charlestown take notice of the event December 26. It was then voted to hold a commemorative service, Tuesday, the thirty-first. As the school children took part on that sad occasion, it seems fitting to include an account of the day in these annals.

A detachment of artillery "near the monument" fired minute guns until the procession entered the meeting house, where the exercises were held at one o'clock. Order of the procession:—

The marshal.

The male children, from seven to fourteen years of age.

The public schoolmasters.

The young men from fourteen to twenty-five.

Three military companies.

Military officers.

Citizens.

King Solomon's Lodge of Masons.



The assessors, parish treasurer, and clerk.

Trustees of the free schools.

The ministers and deacons.

Town treasurer and town clerk.

Magistrates and representatives.

The selectmen.

Band of music.

Marshal.

The programme consisted of "a dirge on the organ, prayer, a funeral hymn, discourse, funeral ode, the Valedictory of George Washington, Occasional dirge, blessing."

The entire exercises seem to have been conducted by Rev. Jedediah Morse, D. D., who preached from the text: "So Moses, the servant of the Lord, died. His eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated. And the children of Israel wept for Moses in the Plains of Moab thirty days."

March 3, 1800, it was voted that the representative be directed to petition the general court that the Act incorporating the free schools be so far allowed that three of said body shall be a quorum to transact business. At the May meeting it was voted that four trustees be chosen within and three without the Neck. Thereafter this seems to have been the established rule.

In August of this year it is "voted to build a schoolhouse of brick on or near the spot in which the schoolhouse within the Neck now stands, for the accommodation of schools, town meetings, and other public business, and that all the other school buildings be put in repair." The committee to procure estimates were Lemuel Cox, George Bartlett, Matthew Bridge, Oliver Holden, Thomas Harris. The town proposes "to pay one-third the cost at commencement of the work, one-third when completed, and another third at a distinct period to be agreed upon." Later the trustees are empowered to dispose of the old school building to the best advantage.

May 10, 1802. Voted \$100, to repair the schoolhouse near Alewife bridge, and voted the thanks of the town be extended to Mr. Zabdiel B. Adams for the present of a lot of land at the Neck for to erect a town school upon; and to thank Mr. Daniel



Raymond for his present of an ornamental image in the new brick schoolhouse.

We may conclude that the school at Alewife bridge was considerably damaged, probably by fire, for the trustees are given the discretion to repair or to build anew. May 3, 1803, it appears that "the expense of building the new schoolhouse in Ward 3 near Alewife bridge, in addition to \$100 voted last year, was \$400."

July 15, 1805. Voted to dig a well at east end of the brick schoolhouse, to contain two pumps. There were two other wells in town (for fire purposes) at this time.

July 3, 1812. Voted that the trustees have printed and handed to the citizens by the constables for the May meeting an annual statement of their funds, and a correct amount of moneys expended, in future. This was not an innovation, for there are in existence printed reports signed May, 1801, and May, 1802. The next that has come down to us is for 1813.

From the Report of 1801:—

Mr. Payson had unexpectedly resigned, and a Mr. Tillotson was engaged on trial. Unfortunately he fell ill, and the school was supplied by Messrs. Sewall and Rockwood, and afterwards for about the same time, six or seven weeks, by James Pike. Finally Mr. Ashur Adams was engaged. Mr. Blood was in charge of the reading school for young misses, and also gave instruction in English grammar, geography, and the Latin and Greek languages. The trustees flatter themselves that these gentlemen will give reasonable satisfaction to the town. Amount of money received, including \$1,000 towards building the new schoolhouse and town hall, \$1,124.81. Paid out, \$3,035.10; leaving a balance of \$1,089.71, "and the trustees are proud to say they owe not a single dollar, to their knowledge." The number of scholars, between the ages of seven and fourteen (both sexes), exclusive of those without the Neck, is 347. Of these, sixty-six live above the house of Captain Richard Frothingham. The trustees recommend building a school at the Neck for them. This will require another master. The sum appropriated for the last five years past, where there has been only one



master within the Neck, has been \$1,666.66. The estimate for the coming year is as follows:—

For two masters, within the Neck .....	\$1,091.67
Wood .....	50.00
For poor children, education and books .....	125.00
Rent for room, stove, etc. .....	100.00
For school No. 2, without the Neck .....	287.00
No. 3,     "     "     " .....	145.00
No. 4,     "     "     " .....	145.00
	—————
	\$1,943.67
Deducting income of school fund .....	437.85
	—————
Leaves to be provided for .....	\$1,505.82

Signed by Benjamin Hurd, Jr., Secretary.

On hearing this report the town generously "voted \$1,650 for schools, not including cost of new schoolhouse."

From the Report of 1802:—

There will be required \$1,650, in addition to the income from the fund for the following purposes: To support the three schools without the Neck, to maintain two masters "the year round" within the peninsula; \$150 will be needed for supporting a school on or in the neighborhood of the Neck, and \$100 for the children of the poor. The trustees propose that all schools taught by the women, as well as the others, be free schools and supported at the expense of the town; also, that they be under the superintendence of the trustees. This undertaking will add four or five schools for little children to be taught by women, at an additional expense to the town of \$1,000. The lot of land given by Mr. Adams is in a very commodious situation near the Neck, and there are enough scholars in that section to constitute a school, and enough below to fill the two public schools by the meeting-house. The trustees recommend building on this lot at the Neck, as a gentleman offers to loan for two years a sum sufficient to erect a schoolhouse.

Signed May 10, 1802, by Benjamin Hurd, Jr., Secretary.

[To be Continued.]



## NEIGHBORHOOD SKETCH NUMBER 8

### WASHINGTON AND PROSPECT STREETS

By Joseph H. Clark

I lived at the corner of what is now called Washington and Prospect streets (then Charlestown) about the year 1838-40, with my parents, Jonathan C. and Irene G. Clark.

Father kept a grocery store in the same building that now stands there, and there was at that time but one other grocery in town—that was Johnny Ireland's at the corner of School street and Somerville avenue, now called, whose principal trade was retailing New England rum, which was a common custom in those days with grocerymen.

I attended school at the building or schoolhouse on Medford street (Mrs. Whittredge, teacher), and I think there were but two other schoolhouses in town at that time. I attended church and Sunday school in the hall of the old Engine house, situated corner of Washington and Prospects streets, opposite my house, where I think the first Unitarian society first worshipped. Next to me, easterly, was the residence of Mr. Clark Bennett, who at that time was prominent in "town matters"; beyond me, next easterly, was what was called the "Yellow Block," in which resided Nathan Fellows, who sold fish out of a wagon; next easterly was Ives Hill; next, James Underwood.

Opposite my house, on Washington street, resided Joseph Clark (no relation of mine); next westerly, William Bonner (on the site of Prospect-hill schoolhouse), next westerly, Miss Eliza Bonner, afterward Mrs. Augustus Hitchings; next westerly, David Sanborn.

Adjoining my estate were the residences of Benjamin F. Ricker and John (B.) Giles, on Somerville avenue.

All of my neighbors that I have mentioned lived to a good old age, and have long since departed and joined the silent majority.

At the time I refer to there was no public conveyance to Boston—Somerville avenue was not completed from Prospect to Medford streets. Farming, brickmaking, and milk were the principal occupations of the townspeople.

Somerville, April 26, 1900.



# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Florence E. Carr
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot	Anna P. Vinal	L. Roger Wentworth
-------------------	---------------	--------------------

## Committee on Historic Sites

J. O. Hayden, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot	Edward Glines
------------------------	-------------------	---------------

## Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot
W. E. Brigham	Seth Mason

Mrs. J. F. Ayer

## Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman	Edith Hayes	Mrs. Helen Heald
----------------------------	-------------	------------------

## Photographs

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman	James F. Whitney
	Albert L. Haskell

## Press and Clippings

W. P. Jones, Chairman	Anna P. Vinal
Mrs. Emma Prichard Hadley	Lucy M. Stone

## Committee on Publications

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman	Frank M. Hawes
Sara A. Stone	Samuel Earle

## Military Records

J. H. Dusseault, Chairman	Alfred M. Cutler	Mary A. Haley
---------------------------	------------------	---------------

## House

Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman	Mrs. E. F. Hammond
---------------------------	--------------------

## Hospitality

Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury
	Mrs. Mae D. Frazier



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

October, 1905

Vol. IV

No. 3



## CONTENTS.

PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION

VETERAN

Levi Ladday Hawes

CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1812

Frank M. Hawes

CONSTITUTION OF THE SOMERVILLE UNION

BENEVOLENT SEWING SOCIETY

# HISTORIC LEAVES.

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postage included.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by members of the Publication Committee.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM. WALTER FOSS, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARLE

F 84484.4

# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

VOL. IV.

OCTOBER, 1905

No. 3

---

## PERSONAL EXPERIENCE OF A UNION VETERAN

By Levi Lindley Hawes

(Continued.)

About the middle of April General Butler learned that Farragut's fleet had crossed the bar and was ready to proceed up the Mississippi. Six regiments and two batteries were immediately embarked on sailing transports and started for the front. On the eighteenth—although about sixty miles away—we heard the gentle voice of Porter's fifteen-inch mortars. Then came the cheering account of Farragut's passing the forts—Jackson and St. Philip—and later the landing of General Butler in New Orleans on the first of May. Other troops were sent forward as transportation could be furnished, till early in May the Thirteenth Maine only was left on the island.

"Many are called, but few are chosen," was my comment at the time; and we were the chosen few. Some of the boys regarded this as punishment, but punishment for what? No adequate answer was forthcoming. We had been inspected by General Butler himself, and very recently by a regular army officer, who pronounced the Thirteenth Maine second to no regiment in the department. Until the forts below New Orleans were captured, Ship Island was the only approach to the city held by Union troops, and it was of the last importance that it should be garrisoned by reliable troops.

Of course we exercised a soldier's prerogative, and grumbled and chafed at our seemingly inglorious assignment; and yet we were performing a most important military duty.

As a relief from the monotony of our service here, we occa-



sionally sent expeditions to the Mississippi shore to afford protection to known Union men against bushwhackers, and to show the rebels generally that we were ever on the alert. As a matter of fact, we had reason to believe that we were liable to receive a visit from the rebels at any hour, day or night. July 8 brought the pay-master, and orders. One company was ordered to Fort Pike, on the Rigolets, and one to Fort Macomb, on Pass Chef Menteur, these being the entrances to Lake Pontchartrain. Three companies were ordered to Fort Jackson, and one to Quarantine Station, about five miles above the fort. A few days later two companies were ordered to Fort St. Philip, leaving two companies, and regimental headquarters, on Ship Island.

These several transfers, you will notice, carried the entire regiment to guard all the water approaches to New Orleans, save the river above the city, and *B'rragut the Superb* was competent to attend to that approach.

According to the repeated statements of the commanding general, "the Thirteenth Maine regiment held the *posts of honor* in the Department of the Gulf."

On the twenty-eighth of April Colonel Dow was promoted to brigadier-general, and Lieutenant-Colonel Rust succeeded to the command of the regiment. Shortly after our arrival on Ship Island, I was detailed in the adjutant's office. Adjutant Speed was promoted to captain and assigned to General Dow's staff as acting assistant adjutant-general. Sergeant-Major Wilson was promoted to adjutant, and I was "warranted" to rattle around in the office vacated by him. And I found it no sinecure, for during the absence of the adjutant on several occasions, the entire duties of the office devolved on me.

When the three companies were transferred to Fort Jackson, I was detailed as acting adjutant of the post. Later I served in the same capacity at Fort St. Philip and in New Orleans.

The post—Forts Jackson and St. Philip—was commanded, for a short time, by Brigadier-General Neal Dow. Here altogether new responsibilities were thrust upon us. Vessels, and crafts of every description, passing up and down the river, were required by department orders to "heave to" and obtain the per-



mission of the boarding officer before they could proceed to New Orleans or to sea.

The many bayous leading to the rear of Fort Jackson were always a source of anxiety, for this whole section seemed to be cursed by or with guerrillas; and it was our fortune to capture and disperse several gangs of these wretches.

Within a few weeks after our arrival, the Hartford and Brooklyn dropped anchor off the forts. It was Admiral Farragut's first and only visit after the capture, and as he remained over night, the garrisons proceeded to burn powder and send up rockets in his honor, and in various other ways demonstrated to the illustrious hero that his name and record were as dear to us as they were to the blue-jackets, and I may add that his visit was a God-send to us. At 9 o'clock the next morning the Hartford and Brooklyn went to sea. The echo of our guns fired in salute had hardly died away, when the signal gun brought every soldier to the parapet. Then a solid shot went whistling across the river, and then another. Every gun in both forts was trained for business. At this juncture "H. B. M. S. S. Rinaldo" rounded to, and with loud protests and threats (!) her commander demanded of the boarding officer "by what authority he was fired upon." He was courteously informed "by what authority," although he was already informed as regards General Butler's orders in general and particular. The Hartford, flying the admiral's flag, was amenable to this particular order.

Luckily for this irate Englishman, he had level-headed New England men to deal with. Had we observed strictly the letter of our orders, the Rinaldo would have been knocked into kindling wood. The commander was kindly warned in regard to his future behavior while passing this outpost, and I am sure that the boarding officer indulged in no ambiguous language.

At this time the notable General Order No. 28 had been in force about four months, and had become of almost international importance. Rebels and their sympathizers, foreign as well as American, were using their utmost endeavors to bury its author under a world of obloquy. The world now knows that General Order No. 28 was productive of good, and only of good; to all



*the people* within the limits of the Department of the Gulf. No soldier ever misconstrued the significance of the order. I can't believe that any rebel ever did. The order executed itself while General Butler remained in the department. It is my belief that General Butler spoke advisedly when he said "there were more paroled rebel soldiers in New Orleans than there were Union troops within fifty miles of his headquarters," because he had caused a census to be taken, and was thus enabled to *locate* every man and woman in the city.

The Thirteenth Maine was put to a cruel test by being placed, in our already weak physical condition, in the malarial swamps of Southern Louisiana, in mid-summer, and kept there for more than a year. And, alas! too, too many heroic souls sleep beneath the soil that once echoed to the tread of millions of human slaves. But we never forgot that we belonged to the "Lord's Country"—never forgot who we were, and what. Even when, one foggy night, Sentinel Swaney shot the quartermaster's mule because it would not obey his challenge to halt, it was credited to his vigilance. And when a soldier tumbled off the draw-bridge into the moat among the alligators, it furnished amusement for the entire garrison—his little dog barking in unison. A few days later the pet dog was "gathered in" by an alligator.

I apprehend that no troops scanned the orders of their department commander more critically or with more complete satisfaction than did we during all these months when the saintly sinners in New Orleans were devoutly praying for the advent of yellow fever, while we, from the head of the roster to the foot, were *prayerfully working* to render its approach impossible.

In New Orleans General Butler organized a brigade of "contrabands," prisoners, and the odds and ends of every nationality, armed with picks, shovels, hoes, brooms, and mule carts, which, under competent officers, proceeded to remove inches, and in some localities *feet*, of the accumulation of a century of fever-breeding material from almost the entire surface within the limits of the city. I do not know that the natives had a vision of a new heaven, but I am sure that there dawned on their aston-



ished sight a *new earth*, of which, perhaps, they never had even dreamed. The streets and alleys of the city had been the theatre of many an upheaval; but I question if New Orleans, as a whole, ever before, or since, got into *such a scrape*, or had so happy an issue out of a deplorable condition.

Of course the gallant action of our fleet in forcing its way past these forts, and dealing with the rebel crafts above, was a theme on which it was our delight to dwell, and from which we gathered inspiration. The gunboat "Varuna" sunk or disabled six of her antagonists before she received her mortal wound; but the gallant Captain Boggs ran his sinking ship to the bank and tied her to a tree, and saved every soul aboard. The trucks of the bow gun-carriage were under water when the gun fired its last shot. When I climbed to her half-submerged deck a few months afterwards, I instinctively took off my cap in salute of the flag that *once proudly floated* at her peak, but was *not* hauled down in *token of surrender*. But the tangible reminder of all the gallant deeds performed in connection with the capture of the forts rendered our inaction more and more irksome.

Then came the rumor—through rebel sources (sources, by the way, through which we received much information of the doings in Washington)—that General Banks had been ordered to relieve General Butler. On Sunday, December 14, 1862, General Banks and his fleet of transports passed the forts. "Mobile and Texas," so ran the rumor, "are to be annexed at once." We hoped to be included in the annexation business. But the programme was materially modified. About three months later I received a letter from General Dudley's adjutant-general asking me to come to Baton Rouge immediately, for he and other officers had recommended me to Colonel Paine, of the First Louisiana Regiment, who desired an adjutant familiar with the duties of the office. By reason of lack of transportation, a week or two passed before I was able to report; and then I found the army all ready to move out towards Port Hudson. The colonel had been obliged to detail one of his own officers, and it was too late to make any change. I housed my disappointment and resumed my duties at Fort St. Philip.



July 8 Port Hudson was "annexed," in spite of my non-attendance at the ceremonies, and another chunk of conceit was knocked out of me.

Previous to this date, several officers and enlisted men, disgusted at being cooped up in garrison, had sought and obtained promotion and transfer to other regiments.

Let me say here, parenthetically, that at least two brigade commanders—regular army officers—made application to have the Thirteenth Maine Regiment assigned each to his brigade for the Port Hudson campaign.

In August the regiment rallied around the flag in New Orleans, where we performed provost guard duty. This change of station and re-assembling of the regiment afforded some relief, but it was not the sort of relief we most desired. And we soon found that, under the existing administration, General Order No. 28, before spoken of, had become less operative. Officers, and even enlisted men, were subjected to gross insults by the women of the city.

Late one afternoon the orderly at our headquarters hurriedly entered the office, saying, "Adjutant, General Banks is on the sidewalk, and he desires to see you." As I presented myself, the general put his arm through mine and invited me to take a walk with him. His "walk" took us out to Canal street, and up that fashionable thoroughfare for several blocks, the general meanwhile talking in his easy, familiar fashion—I, wondering what in the world was the object of this promenade.

Suddenly the general halted, dropped my arm, and then said: "Adjutant, will you please take the number of this mansion? As I was riding with some of my officers this afternoon, I was grossly insulted by some women on the balcony of this house. I will teach these women that they can't insult me or my officers with impunity. You will place a guard here and allow any one to go in, but no one is to be allowed to come out." Again taking my arm, the general accompanied me to our headquarters on St. Charles street, talking on subjects entirely disconnected from army affairs. A suitable guard was immediately placed as ordered. In due time a court-martial was convened. A woman



was tried and found guilty of the charge preferred and specification, and sentenced to spend her vacation months on Ship Island. The spirit of General Order No. 28 became operative from that hour. The virtues of "the lightning-rod," as the boys called Order No. 28, were again to be tested.

The fact that our colonel was then on detached service led me to believe that the Thirteenth Maine was destined to remain on duty in New Orleans for an indefinite period. Lieutenant-Colonel Buck (late captain in our regiment), who had been assigned to the Twentieth Regiment Corps d'Afrique, then stationed at Fort Macomb, had, a month or two before, without my knowledge, appointed me captain in his regiment. Having served so long in the Thirteenth Maine, I had become so strongly attached to it that it seemed almost like disloyalty to withdraw from it. But I thought I saw a prospect of getting into more active service; therefore, with some misgiving, I finally accepted the commission and joined my company at Fort Macomb. The post commander (Buck) and all the officers of the four companies stationed here were promoted out of the Thirteenth Maine Regiment. Although we regarded ourselves as "would-be fighters," we yet constituted a happy family.

The Twentieth Regiment Corps d'Afrique—so re-named by General Banks—was organized by General Butler from the First and Second Regiments, Louisiana Native Guards, which left the rebel service and disbanded when the Union troops first occupied the city. This regiment was composed of *free colored* men, men of much intelligence, good soldiers, and keen on the scent after smugglers. Furthermore, the regiment contained many good mechanics. Courts-martial were unknown in my company. During more than two years' service, I had occasion to discipline but one man—this for lying. While I was proud of my command, it was a grievous disappointment to be assigned to garrison duty, of which I had had more than enough. Patrolling the lakes and bayous, day and night, in an open boat, was not ideal yachting. And when I learned that the Thirteenth Maine was booked for the Red River campaign, I concluded that the government didn't need my services, anyway,—surely not at the



front. However, if we were not at the front, we held the rear with a firm grip; and I never heard of more than two cases of even yellow fever getting by us.

After nearly a year of this sort of service (and by a process of *evolution* having become known as the "Ninety-first Regiment, U. S. C. I."), a corps of schoolmasters was sent down to us to ascertain how much or how little we knew about war. There were twelve of us to appear before this "weeding-out committee," as in reality we knew it to be. I catalogued myself as a weed gone to seed. It took a colonel, major, captain, and lieutenant about one hour to find out how much the eleven officers really chose to know. Some of them knew they wished to leave the service—and their wishes found favor at headquarters. I sat in my quarters shivering, although the thermometer registered about 100 in the shade, till the orderly brought the message that the "Board" would like to see me. My temperature suddenly became normal, and I thought that if it took the "Board" sixty minutes to dispose of eleven cases, it could dispose of my case in four minutes; that is to say, I thought I could tell them all I knew in that length of time. But I woefully miscalculated the staying qualities of those four officers. As the clock struck eight, the first question was fired at me. When it struck twelve, the president declared the examination closed. The last half-hour, however, was passed in a delightful talk. Two propositions were made to me. The colonel proposed that I be recommended for promotion and assigned to staff duty. The major—a regular army officer—said he would like to have me transferred to the regular service. I was profoundly grateful for their proposed recommendations, and I frankly told them so. I protested that I was not lacking in ambition; but my ambition was to remain in the volunteer service till the close of the war; that my desire for peace was so intense that I was ready and willing to fight for it. The temptation to yield to their several arguments was great, but I believe that I decided wisely.

Shortly thereafter came orders consolidating the Ninety-first Regiment with the Seventy-fourth Regiment—headquarters at Ship Island. All surplus officers, including all the field officers



of the Ninety-first Regiment, received an honorable discharge. Major Pike, on assuming command at Fort Macomb, told me that the company to which I had been assigned at Ship Island was under orders to proceed to Mobile Bay, where Admiral Farragut was making preparations to attack the forts. "Glory! Hallelujah!" I shouted. The astonished major said, "What! are you *that* anxious to have your head knocked off?" "Oh, no, not that," I answered, "but I have a consuming desire to lead these boys where we can get a wholesome whack at this edge of the diabolical rebellion."

My orders directed me to proceed to Ship Island via New Orleans. On arriving at the latter place, without stopping to even tighten my belt, I hastened to the office of the quartermaster of transportation to secure passage to my post, explaining the urgency of the request. By way of answer, the officer said that "he had sent every sort of craft that could carry a major-general or a bag of oats to Mobile Bay, and he didn't expect any boat would return within a day or two." "But I've *got* to go," I protested. "Have you got a sailboat, yawl, or pirogue, for I am as much of a sailor as a soldier, and I can manage anything that will float?" The quartermaster became interested, thinking, perhaps, that the applicant was a lunatic. Discovering that there was method in my madness, he courteously said, "Captain, call here to-morrow at 10 o'clock, and if a boat comes in I will send you to Ship Island forthwith if I have nothing but a bale of hay for freight." I do not know what else the boat carried, but I have a vivid recollection of the fact that she bore me, freighted with anxiety, hope, and expectation, to my destination, just in season to learn that what should have been my company had already gone to Mobile Bay, and I had been assigned to Company "K," which was composed in part of the "surplus men"—odds and ends—of the "consolidated regiment"—a company at least one-third larger than any other in the regiment,—and every man at the post, white and black, was an entire stranger to me. I was the victim of a situation and a condition. I might have said *O. K.* at the outlook, but I didn't. I said *nothing*, but went to *work*. After a few days the colonel did me



the honor to call on me and read me a letter from General T. W. Sherman, ordering him to "detail an officer to act as ordnance and artillery officer." "None of my old officers," he said, "have any knowledge of ordnance or heavy artillery. You, I have been informed, are well up in these branches, and I have instructed the adjutant to make out an order detailing you, with your company, for this service." To have him whose fame as a battery commander was a household word throughout the United States (and the so-called "Confederate States of America," as well) for my superior officer caused me to forget my Mobile Bay disappointment. On my first inspection I found two 100-pounder Parrott guns, and five eleven-inch Dahlgren guns, all mounted in sand batteries, and all save the Parrotts practically unserviceable. As for ordnance stores, the post lacked almost everything. I immediately made out a requisition for such stores as I deemed essential, and referred it to the colonel, who said, "The war will be over before your requisition will be filled." "On the contrary," I replied, "it will be filled by return boat, or Sherman will give me a cursing that will be heard in Washington."

The first steamer from New Orleans brought every article for which I had made requisition—not omitting the garrison gin and gin-sling, which were not brought in bottles. "I guess old Tom Sherman knows you," was the colonel's comment as the stores were landed on the wharf. "I apprehend he *will know* me before he is done with me," I replied, "for I have a report on the condition of the batteries which I would like to have you sign and transmit to the general by this boat." The report was forwarded. It came back, with a Shermanese double-shotted letter. In language that didn't look well as written nor sound heavenly when spoken, the general ordered the colonel to send the fool captain where he belonged, and detail the best officer he had, as he was originally ordered to do. The colonel was somewhat scared. I was happy. "Please leave the report with me," I said, "and I will trump the general's trick. Since I have been kicked by a government mule, I don't shy at trifles." The second report proved sufficient to bring the inspector-general of the defences of New Orleans down upon me about five o'clock one



Saturday afternoon. Before going to headquarters, the inspector, Colonel Smith, with whom I was well acquainted, called on me, and in his peculiar way informed me of the object of his visit. "You and I," he began, "are in the same boat. The general alleges that you falsely report that the five Dahlgren gun-carriages are liable to collapse at the first or second discharge of the gun; that the plank gun foundations of the batteries are rotten and unsafe. The general is mad at you, and he is wrathy with me for saying to him that I knew you personally, and that you were not capable of making a false report. My reputation as well as yours is involved. To-morrow morning at nine o'clock we will demonstrate that you know your business." Battery No. 1, near my quarters, was the first one tested that Sunday morning. The gun-carriage collapsed utterly at the first discharge. "I have seen enough," said the inspector; "if you will allow me, I will spend the rest of the morning in your quarters, while you proceed with your work of destruction." At 12 o'clock I reported "one gun-carriage demolished at the *first* discharge; *three* carriages at the *second*, and *one* carriage at the *third* discharge." "You have redeemed your promise; and it is the best Sunday job I have ever seen," was the inspector's comment.

In recognition of my Sunday's work of destruction, General Sherman sent to our post the Second Ohio Light Battery. And I served as ordnance officer till the regiment was mustered out of service.

Although my second tour of duty on Ship Island was of rather a sober character, yet we occasionally had somewhat stirring times. Armed boat expeditions along the Mississippi shore, and to some of the islands, served to remind us that even our military service was needed still in this waiting-to-be-blest section.

Finally the general before Mobile sent an order for our two 100-pounder Parrott guns. The colonel told the officer who brought the order that the guns were about a mile from the wharf, and that, for lack of facilities, he could neither dismount them nor transport them to the wharf. "But we must have them. The general's orders are imperative," insisted the officer. The colonel sent for me to corroborate his statement.



The two officers chanced to be Americans by brevet, as it were. After some little discussion, I said, "Gentlemen, I am a Yankee, and I beg you will allow me to retire to my quarters and do a bit of thinking." I found my room crowded with officers curious to know what was up. "Gentlemen," I said, "please ask me no question, but leave me alone for ten minutes." My lieutenant sprang to his feet and said, "Boys, get out of here. The captain's got something in his head." Laughing at the lieutenant's drollery, they all retired. In less than ten minutes I had solved the problem—thanks to my habit of *seeing things* and remembering what I see. I sent a detail of twenty men to the lower end of the island to dig out two old ships' gun-carriages that were nearly buried in the sand. Another squad went to the magazine for the garrison gin and all the rigging pertaining to it. The third squad was ordered to bring fifty or more boards to the upper batteries, where the entire company would report for duty. Having adjusted everything to my satisfaction, I dismissed everybody from the battery to man the "fall." Some one here made the reassuring remark that my "rigging wouldn't sustain the weight of the gun." "It must," I replied, as I anxiously noted the stretching of the "sling," and the nervousness of the legs and pry-pole of the gin as the weight of the gun began to get in its work. As the trunnions left their bed, out of the darkness (we were working by night) came the warning, "Captain, come out of the battery, or we'll have a funeral." "Only one," I said, for I would allow no one in the battery with me. I will admit that I laid my hands very gingerly on the huge gun as I swung it into position to lower it into the trunnion beds of the old ship's gun-carriage placed on the parapet to receive it. All chatter had ceased. As gently as a sleeping infant would be placed in its crib, this "Parrott" was lowered to its improvised carriage and eased down the slope of the sand battery and on to the board track on which it was to be transported to the wharf a mile away. Now a question that had been put to me a hundred times, "What are you going to do with those old boards?" was answered by the screaming trucks of a resurrected gun-carriage, as a jolly set of boys seized the drag-



rope and walked away with the gun, while "boarders were called away" to shift track. At eleven o'clock at night (we began at seven), when I dismissed the company, one of the guns was on the wharf; the other one was resting half way on the road. At ten o'clock the next morning the two guns, with 100 rounds of ammunition, were on the way to Mobile; and not the slightest accident or hitch had interrupted the work. And "what couldn't be done" was thus accomplished, chiefly by less than half a hundred black boys, and during a night as dark as their faces. That afternoon the engineer officer in charge of the work on the fort called on me and asked me if I was an engineer. I told him that I was simply an up-and-down, out-and-out Yankee; and that my chief occupation was growling at my ill luck. "Yes," he said, "I know you seem to think that you are a misfit here, but, judging from what I saw of your performance last night, I believe that Providence has placed you here; and if you will allow me, I think you had better stop grumbling." "I didn't see you at the batteries," I said. "Well, I took special pains that you shouldn't see me," he replied. "But I have come to congratulate you on the handsome manner in which you have *undone* some of my work. It took *me* three weeks to roll one of those guns to the battery. You have dismounted and shipped the two guns in less than six hours, and the chief part of the work was done by night. With the facilities I have, by the time I could ship the guns they wouldn't be needed." And yet, the suspicion that I had been guilty of doing anything out of the ordinary hadn't entered my mind. The rebuke for grumbling, however, I took to heart for use in all the future.

At different times we had received "distinguished guests"—for safe keeping. After the capture of Mobile, there were several thousand homeless rebels who sought shelter under our hospitable hospital tents, a large number of which we were able to command for their special benefit. And I question if they ever before during their term of service fared so sumptuously.

My second lieutenant was "commissary of prisoners," and I had ample opportunity to observe the manner in which they were entertained. Indeed, I had the honor of receiving them on



their arrival at our post, and escorting them to their Union quarters. Later I was detailed, with a guard of fifty men and an officer, to conduct about 300 commissioned officers, ranking from colonel to second lieutenant, to New Orleans for exchange. I am free to confess that this service was infinitely more congenial to me than shooting them would have been. My sympathy came quickly to the surface when the ranking officer seized my hand, and with quivering lips thanked me for the solicitude I had manifested for their comfort during the night trip to New Orleans; adding "that it was a continuation of the uniform kindness and consideration that had been extended to them on the island."

According to a provision in Jefferson Davis' "Proclamation," if captured, I would have been "*reserved for execution*." That "Proclamation" of Jeff. Davis, promulgated on the twenty-third day of December, 1862, is a piece of the most villainous writing that has ever been brought to my notice. And I believe it to be an historical fact that the author of it died "without a country."

By a singular fatality, the close of the "War of the Rebellion" found me, after many changes of location, on duty on the desolate island where I first landed more than three years before.

But in our department there were still loose and ragged ends of the rebellion that required special attention; and the "well-seasoned" Seventy-fourth Regiment, U. S. C. I., was one of the regiments retained to perform duties with which it had become familiar, and for which no regiment was better equipped.

Patriotism, loyalty are words which were not flippantly spoken by the men of my command; but by their devotion to duty they *exemplified* their loyalty and patriotism most happily.

With strangely mixed emotions we read our orders to "proceed to New Orleans and prepare for muster-out." The sands of Ship Island were not watered with my tears. But when, on the twenty-first day of November, 1865, we received our honorable discharge from the service and our final pay, and I had performed my last official duty--distributed about \$200 company savings, giving each man his share--and then took each man by the hand and said a last good-by, something snapped.



## CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS AFTER 1812

By Frank Mortimer Hawes

(Continued.)

Before continuing our account of the Charlestown schools, we wish to speak briefly of some of the earlier trustees who honored their office with years of valuable service. Charlestown can point with pride to the long list of men who served her so faithfully. One need but look to the original board of 1793 to see that only her first citizens were considered worthy to be directors of school affairs.

Trustees for 1793 and 1794, Richard Devens, Nathaniel Gorham, Josiah Bartlett, Aaron Putnam, Joseph Hurd, Nathaniel Hawkins, Seth Wyman.

1795 and 1796, the same, with the exception of Mr. Hawkins, who was succeeded by Timothy Tufts.

1797, 1798, 1799, the same, with the exception of Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, who was followed by his son, Nathaniel Gorham, Jr., and Timothy Tufts, who was succeeded by Samuel Tufts.

1800, and 1801, Seth Wyman, Samuel Tufts, Jonathan Teel, Rev. Jedediah Morse, Benjamin Hurd, Jr., Timothy Walker, Timothy Thompson.

1802, Samuel Tufts, Seth Wyman, Jonathan Teel, Captain Thomas Harris, Matthew Bridge, Deacon David Goodwin, Samuel Payson.

1803 and 1804, the same, with the exception of Samuel Payson, who was succeeded by Captain Nehemiah Wyman.

1805, Seth Wyman, Captain Harris, Matthew Bridge, Deacon Goodwin, John Stone, Peter Tufts, Jr., Joseph Phipps.

1806, Seth Wyman, Matthew Bridge, Peter Tufts, Jr., James Green, Elijah Mead, John Tufts, Samuel Thompson.

1807, James Green, Elijah Mead, Peter Tufts, Jr., Captain Daniel Reed, John Kettell, Daniel Parker, Samuel Kent.

1808, the same, with the exception of James Green, who was succeeded by Timothy Thompson.

1809, the same.



1810, the same, with the exception of Timothy Thompson, who was succeeded by David Devens.

1811, Rev. William Collier, Jonas Tyler, William Austin, Joseph Phipps, Samuel Kent, Philemon R. Russell, Ebenezer Cutter.

1812, Rev. William Collier, Dr. Abram R. Thompson, Captain Nehemiah Wyman, Captain Daniel Reed, David Stetson, Captain Joseph Miller, George Bartlett.

1813, 1814, 1815, the same.

1816, the same, with the exception of Captain Miller, who is succeeded by Isaac Tufts.

Holding over for a number of years previous to the re-organization of 1793 is the name of Nathaniel Hawkins. Wyman, who gives him the title of colonel, says that Mr. Hawkins came to Charlestown from South Kingston, R. I., and that he was recorded in the census of 1789 with his children, Nathaniel, Christopher, Sarah, and Samuel. This was after the death of the first Mrs. Hawkins, and about the time of his second marriage. Both wives were the daughters of Samuel Kent (Vol. III., p. 89). Old residents of Union square will remember the two homes of the Hawkins families in that vicinity. At his own request, Mr. Hawkins' term on the school board ended May 6, 1795, when he received the thanks of the town for his valued services. As local committeeman for Milk Row district, his name has been mentioned frequently in these articles. After 1795 we find him holding various town offices, as surveyor of highways and selectman. He died October 3, 1817, aged sixty-nine (Wyman). On the board of trustees he was succeeded for two years by Timothy Tufts, Esq., and the next in succession from their district was Samuel Tufts, 1797-1804, inclusive. For a brief account of these two brothers the reader is referred to Vol. III., p. 92.

Another name which has already received our attention is that of Seth Wyman. For several years before 1793, and for fourteen years after, 1793-1806, inclusive, Mr. Wyman served continuously on the school board, perhaps the longest of any one individual after Samuel Kent. His home was in the upper



part of the town, in what is now Arlington, near the Mystic ponds. He was the son of Hezekiah Wyman, and was born in 1750. About 1774 he married Ruth Belknap, and was the father of eight children. He died in April, 1825, aged seventy-five (Wyman).

The names of Richard Devens, Nathaniel Gorham, and Josiah Bartlett would add lustre to the history of any municipality. All three were actively engaged in town affairs during the trying days of the Revolution and in the important years which followed, when state and national constitutions were being established, and each gained for himself in his special line of service more than a local reputation. Wyman's invaluable work gives an account of these gentlemen. Hon. Richard Devens, commissary-general in the Revolutionary army, was the first president of the school trustees. His portrait, painted by Henry Sargent, 1798, and bequeathed to his native town by Charlotte Harris, hangs in the Boston Branch Library at Charlestown, City square. A later generation has made the name of Devens still more illustrious. Our interest in Hon. Josiah Bartlett, M. D., LL.D., (1759-1820) centres chiefly in his sketch of 1813, which may be called the first history of Charlestown. Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, regarded by Wyman as one of the most eminent men that ever lived in Charlestown, died while serving on the board of trustees, and was succeeded by his son and namesake the following May, 1797.

Two others elected to the original body of trustees should have more than a passing mention,—Aaron Putnam, Esq., and Joseph Hurd. The former was the first treasurer of the organization, an important office when we consider that it was for a better management of the school funds that a charter was granted by legislative act. Dr. Putnam's name deserves to be mentioned in connection with Charlestown affairs, for it was he who, in 1801, sold to the United States four acres of his own, and as agent secured sixty-five acres, exclusive of flats, for a navy yard. Joseph Hurd, if we mistake not, served as the first secretary of the trustees. He was the son of Benjamin Hurd,



and, as we understand it, brother of Benjamin, Jr., who succeeded him on the board.

It is a noticeable fact that Messrs. Devens, Bartlett, Putnam, Hurd, and Gorham, Jr., all retired from office at the same time, and few of their successors, to judge from their terms of service, enjoyed a like degree of popular favor. Jonathan Teel was one of these; he stood for the outlying districts, and continued in office until May, 1805, five years. He died in Somerville June 7, 1828, aged seventy-four, and left worthy descendants to keep the family name in prominence. John Stone and Peter Tufts, Jr., next represent our part of the town, the former serving modestly for one year, the latter for six years. Seth Wyman, the last of the original board, retired in 1807, and was succeeded by Captain Daniel Reed, who for nine years represented the upper end of Charlestown.

Hon. Timothy Walker, Timothy Thompson, Captain Thomas Harris, Deacon David Goodwin, and John Kettell are names that stand for representative Charlestown families, but perhaps the most suggestive name on the list is that of Rev. Jedediah Morse, D. D. (1761-1826). This gentleman, a native of Connecticut, a graduate of Yale, and the leading minister of Charlestown from 1789 to 1820, was at this time delighting the educational world with his Geography, one of the first American text-books to gain an extensive and lasting circulation. For more than fifty years it was used in all parts of the country, but the later editions bore little resemblance to the feeble little volume which first saw the light in Charlestown. It served, where schoolbooks were scarce, not only as a geography, but also as a reading and spelling book. We of to-day are favored with a reminder of this pioneer in American education every time we pass his residence, which is marked with a tablet that proclaims the birthplace of his illustrious son, Samuel F. B. Morse, 1791.

With the election in 1811 and 1812, respectively, of Rev. William Collier, pastor of the First Baptist church of Charlestown, and Abram Rand Thompson, M. D., an old-time physician, whose eighty-five years of life came to an end in his native town



in 1866, a new order of things seems to have been introduced. We will now go back to the report for 1812, the first with which we are favored after that of 1802. From now on there will be no interruptions in these reports, and from some of them we shall expect to make copious extracts.

May 8, 1812, the board of trustees organized, with Rev. William Collier, president; Abram R. Thompson, secretary; Nehemiah Wyman, treasurer, who gave bonds for \$10,000. Milk Row School, it will be noticed, at this time was represented by Captain Joseph Miller. The number of children in town was 1,167, or 457 between the ages of four and seven, and 710 from seven to fourteen. It appears that no children beyond the Neck, under seven and over fourteen years of age, were allowed to attend the town school. In reply to the complaints which came, in consequence, from the outlying districts, the report says that School No. 4 (Alewife Brook) contains thirty-four children, from four to fourteen, and yet this district receives for that number as much money as is expended within the Neck for fifty-one scholars. "This distinction in favor of the schools outside is, in the opinion of the trustees, an ample indemnification for all inconveniences arising from their local situation; besides, the money appropriated without the Neck is abundantly sufficient to defray the expenses of their schools through that part of the year when the inhabitants send their children to them, from seven years old and upward; and the expense of educating their children under seven, it seems as just and reasonable for them to pay out of their own pockets as it is for the inhabitants within the Neck to do it. When we consider that, of the 1,167 children in town, only 133 are without the Neck, or less than one-eighth, and that we expend upon them more than one-fourth of the money (contingencies excepted), it cannot be denied that the rule is not only favorable, but generous, to the people without the Neck."

The teachers of the town schools were Israel Alger, with Oliver Jaquith for an assistant, and for the others Messrs. Fuller and Stickney. There had been two public examinations of each during the year, and frequent informal visits had been made, "as



a board." As a necessary and valuable auxiliary in teaching geography, the trustees had furnished a pair of globes and a map for the use of Mr. Alger's school.

A brief allusion is made to the schools taught by women. As an application for a school for black children had been made, one was established which was kept from June to November. Some mischievous boys that were detected in petty thefts were brought before the board, admonished, reproved, and exhorted, and their parents acquainted with their behavior. The three schools without the Neck were all visited in the spring (1813), "and the trustees can with sincere pleasure bestow the most unqualified approbation on them." "The sum required for the current year will be \$3,000, the same as last year."

From the report read May 2, 1814:—

The writing school, kept by D. Fuller, was vacated by him May 20, and Mr. Jaquith took the charge until June 8, when David Dodge was installed. July 18 Mr. Alger suddenly resigned as principal of the grammar school, on account of ill health, and Abraham Andrews, A. B., was elected his successor August 9. Mr. Stickney, at the Neck, gave up his position January 15, and was later succeeded by John Bennett. Mr. Jaquith was retained this year as Mr. Andrews' assistant. He resigned June, 1814, and was succeeded by Robert Gordon.

February 25 the trustees visited District No. 5, which contains twenty-eight scholars, under the care of Nathaniel Green, and also that under Jacob Pierce, No. 4, which has fifty-eight scholars. April 12 they visited the school in Milk Row, No. 3, containing sixty-nine scholars, under Moses Hall. April 19 they visited the school at the Neck, with ninety pupils, under Mr. Bennett, and April 26 and 29 the two schools at No. 1, under Messrs. Andrews, Jaquith, and Dodge. "They were perfectly satisfied with the good order and improvement of all." "The schools without the Neck are kept only part of the year, and are not confined to any age." The amount spent on the schools for small children (women's schools) was \$872.48. Dr. Bartlett, in his address of 1813, says: "A public support of schools kept by women for primary instruction and free to every inhabitant,



under the direction of the trustees, though novel, is honorable to the town, and affords a pleasing presage of future improvement." If, as he says, twenty-one districts were established, and to each a schoolmistress was assigned for those from four to seven, then, as the whole number was 425, each teacher had about twenty pupils, and the cost for each child was a little more than \$2. The address also informs us that two of the school-houses on the peninsula were of brick, two stories high. In eulogistic mood, Dr. Bartlett goes on to say: "The free schools were the glory of our ancestors, they are the boast of New England, and the palladium of our future prosperity. We cannot refrain from congratulating our fellow-citizens on a situation of their public schools so auspicious to the best interests of the town, so gratifying to the dearest hopes of parents, and bearing such honorable testimony to the eminent ability and fidelity of the instructors."

The records of the school board that have come down to us begin with May, 1814. According to their By-Laws, the trustees met for organization the first Tuesday following the second Monday in January each year; other meetings to be held as desired. Special meetings could be called by the secretary on direction of the chairman or two members. The treasurer was to give bonds for \$6,000. All bills were to be examined by the chairman and secretary, and to be approved in writing, if found correct. The officers of the board were the same as last given.

August 18, 1814. Voted to Captain Miller \$250 for the use of Districts No. 3 and 4. "In November the school of Messrs. Andrews and Dodge was examined by the trustees, and a large number of highly respectable visitors. The reverend president opened the exercises with prayer. All were gratified with the behavior and proficiency of the children, and, considering the confused and agitated state of the town, this was highly honorable to the instructors. The exercises closed with prayer by Rev. Mr. Turner. February 10, 1815, the trustees met at Captain Daniel Reed's (end of the town) to visit No. 5, under Nathaniel Green (number of scholars, twenty-eight), also No. 4,



under Jacob Pierce. Milk Row (No. 3) was visited Wednesday, April 12, at 2 o'clock. Present, Messrs. Wyman, Miller, and Thompson, of the trustees. This school, under P. T. Gray, was in "a respectable state of improvement. The females at this and every examination have been distinguished for their juvenile attainments, as well as propriety of behavior."

Among the bills approved April 21 were those of A. Andrews, two quarters, \$103.39; P. T. Gray, \$82.85; Martha Ireland, \$58.50; Jacob Pierce, \$123.75; Philemon R. Russell, \$80.54.

Abraham Andrews, having resigned, was "dismissed with encomiums." At the examination, April 27, of Messrs. Dodge and Andrews' school at the town hall, "it was a delightful sight to behold 330 children, all clean and decent in their apparel, all prompt in their exercises, all animated with youthful emulation, and hope, and joy, assembled on the floor of an invaluable common privilege. The trustees will not conceal their joy and gratification in view of the interesting scene." Jesse Smith, a graduate of Dartmouth College, for the past year preceptor of New Ipswich Academy, succeeds Mr. Andrews, at the established salary of \$666.66. A school for black children, opened May 1, and kept through the summer months to the approbation of the trustees, was under the charge of Mrs. Eleanor Jackson. The sum of \$1,000 was reserved exclusively for the women's schools within the Neck. Each schoolmistress was required to make a monthly report, together with an accurate return of all children under her charge. These schools opened May 1, and closed the last of October. Five hundred children from four to seven were thus educated at the expense of the town. The report read May 1, 1815, says: "The trustees for two years past have kept a summer school at Winter Hill and the inhabitants have asked for a schoolhouse. The trustees would recommend one if, at the present time, our fellow-citizens were not struggling with great and accumulated burdens. They will endeavor to continue the school on its present establishment another year. They indulge the pleasing hope that, with the joyful return of peace, our fellow-citizens will be restored to their wonted occu-



pations, when they will cheerfully support additional means of education, as the increasing population of the town may require." (Signed A. R. Thompson.) This school was probably in the vicinity of Franklin street. Query: Was it in charge of Miss Martha Ireland, whose name has been already mentioned?

#### 1815-1816.

May 16. Voted that Captain Miller open the summer schools in Districts No. 3 and No. 4, and Captain Reed in No. 5. Mr. Dodge is allowed \$31.25 per quarter for his son Horace, who serves as his assistant in the writing school. "Mr. Smith recommended changing the evangelical instruction for Murray's English Reader and it was so decided."

August 8 John Bennett resigned at the Neck. The trustees engaged Isaac Gates as his successor, and the same salary as for masters at other schools within the Neck was voted him, \$666.66.

April 6, 1816, David Dodge resigned as writing master, and later Robert Gordon, formerly assistant, was promoted to the mastership. Samuel Campbell was elected to second place, at a salary of \$500.

Friday, April 19, Milk Row School, under Yorick S. Gordon, was visited. Messrs. Miller and Thompson were present, with several of the inhabitants of the district. The school appeared very well, notwithstanding many difficulties under which they had labored during the winter. Mr. Gordon had discharged his duties acceptably.

May 6 the trustees met, and, taking into consideration the high price of living and, at the same time, appreciating the valuable and successful services of Mr. Gates as a teacher, recommended making him a special grant of \$40. Schools in Districts No. 4 and 5 have been kept the past winter to the satisfaction of the board.

In reference to women's schools: "By making the privilege of instruction free to all has preserved the chain of education unbroken by the distresses of the people in the shock of war, and so has been an inducement to many to remain in our town.



Happily the scene is changed." "\$1,400 will be wanted next year, in addition to the \$1,500 for small children's schools."

#### 1816-1817.

Voted that Isaac Tufts, who has been elected a trustee, have particular charge of No. 3 and No. 4, in place of Captain Miller, resigned, and later, also, of No. 5, as Captain Reed resigned in September. In June Jesse Smith resigned as head of the reading or grammar school. He received the encomiums of the trustees. J. M. K. Wilkins was elected to fill the vacancy. Mr. Gates' salary is raised to \$800. As the number of black children from four to fourteen is only ten, it is voted not to have a school for them. Voted that District No. 3 be continued till the Saturday before the first Monday in April. Voted, April 28, to Martha Ireland, \$66.

April 15 the trustees discussed the Lancastrian plan of education, and it was voted to apply to J. Buchanan, Esq., British consul in New York, for information. From the report, signed May 5, 1817, we learn that District No. 3 is still maintaining two summer schools, namely, at Milk Row and Winter Hill. In speaking of No. 1, R. Gordon's services are highly praised.

#### 1817-1818.

August 9, 1817, the trustees have looked up the Lancastrian system of education, and paid Mr. Dixon \$20 for his information. They decide that it is not feasible for Charlestown:

March 25, 1818. The trustees examined School No. 3. Present, Rev. Mr. Collier, Messrs. I. Tufts, P. Tufts, and Thompson. "About fifty scholars attended the examination, and appeared well in all their performances." Eighty belong to this school, kept this term by Daniel Russell.

April 3 the trustees examined School No. 4, kept by J. Underwood. About forty were present, out of a total of fifty-two. From bills mentioned, D. Russell is paid \$115, and Martha Ireland \$71.50. A clock and bell purchased by a sub-committee is presented by Captain Wyman for the exclusive use of the



school at the Neck. The report recommends the separation of the sexes in the town school. The districts without the Neck have received a liberal allowance of the money appropriated, and No. 5, in particular, has expended more money than for many years before. "It is not to be denied that our schools are expensive, but," etc., etc.

1818-1819.

According to a recommendation in the report of a committee appointed to choose a site for a girls' school, I. Prentiss and Miss S. Carlisle were hired, the former at \$800, the latter at \$400, to have charge. As Mr. Campbell's services were no longer needed, he was discharged. Interesting exercises were held at the opening of this school, September 14, 1818. Later the trustees paid on a lease of eight years \$130 for the building in which the girls' school was kept. It seems that it was built and owned by Rev. Mr. Collier, and stood adjacent to Mr. Collier's meeting house. The Baptist society was allowed the use of the building for a Sunday school. The school numbered 241 April 23, 1819. The boys' school, kept by Messrs. Wilkins and Gordon, numbered 200 in September, 1818. Miss Carlisle seems to have been the first woman to teach in Charlestown in a school above primary grade. "The trustees were of the opinion that an intelligent mistress would fill the place as well as a master." Their expectations seem to have been realized.

Isaac and Joel Tufts are to have charge of the schools without the Neck for the trustees. March 18, 1819, I. Hayward's school, No. 4, was visited. "An excellent teacher and gave fine exhibition." As the school at No. 5 was not satisfactory, it was closed early in consequence. Voted April 13 to report a statement of facts to the town respecting the territorial limits and number of children in District No. 3. This school went on very well under the care of Mr. Russell until the school-house was destroyed by fire, and so there was no regular exhibition. This fire was the third of March. "The district commences in Cambridge road, sweeps around the Cambridge line,



runs across Milk row by Isaac Tufts' to Winter Hill, by the house of Joseph Adams, Esq., to Mystic river, and down to the cluster of houses near the entrance of 3 Pole lane, and over to the place of beginning. It contains sixty-one families, and 106 children from four to fourteen, about one-third of whom are below seven years. The remaining seventy-three would be at a fair calculation the highest number to be provided for. Of these, the largest number live on the Milk Row side." This is the first report signed by James K. Frothingham, secretary of the board. The following quotations seem worthy of a place here: "In populous towns the great mass of boys from seven to fourteen cannot be employed, and it is therefore necessary to keep them constantly at school as a measure of restraint and order, but schools for girls may be suspended with perfect safety, as they can assist at home." From observation of Mr. Hayward's school, "the trustees are of the opinion that a part of the year devoted to learning and the remainder to some other employment will in the end make quite as good scholars as spending the whole year in education."

---

## CONSTITUTION OF THE SOMERVILLE UNION BENEVOLENT SEWING SOCIETY

September 28, 1842

We, the subscribers, do unite ourselves into a society for the relief and assistance of the unfortunate and distressed, and adopt, for our regulation, the following rules:—

ART. 1. This Society shall be called the Somerville Union Benevolent Sewing Society.

ART. 2. The object of this Society shall be, to make clothing for the destitute, and assist them as far as shall be deemed expedient by the Society.

ART. 3. The officers of this Society shall consist of President, Vice-President, Secretary, Treasurer and ten Trustees, all of whom shall be chosen annually.



ART. 4. It shall be the duty of the President, to preside at all meetings of the Society, as often as they may be deemed necessary. In her absence, the duty shall devolve upon the next in office.

ART. 5. It shall be the duty of the Secretary, to keep a correct account of the proceedings of the Society, and present a report of the same annually.

ART. 6. The Treasurer shall be intrusted with the funds which shall be kept subject to the order of the Society. And it shall be the duty of the Treasurer, to present at the annual meeting an account of all the receipts and disbursements.

ART. 7. It shall be the duty of the Trustees to visit the poor and ascertain who are in need of assistance. They shall also assist in preparing and superintending the work.

ART. 8. It shall be the duty of each member to promote the interests of the Society, as far as her circumstances will admit, and to contribute such cast clothing as may be spared with convenience, to assist in sewing at the meetings, and when convenient, obtain work for the Society. Each member shall pay fifty cents annually to the Treasurer, and in proposing a friend for admission, if there be no objection, may introduce her at the next meeting.

ART. 9. The annual meeting shall be held on the last Wednesday in September, for the choice of officers and the transaction of other business. Stated meetings for work shall be held monthly, at the houses of members where it may be convenient. And during the progress of the work, a member shall be requested to read from such books or periodical publications, as may be furnished by the ladies.

ART. 10. In case the funds be not required for the assistance of the poor, they shall be reserved for the purpose of furnishing a meeting house, when the gentlemen see fit to build one.



# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

President	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President	John F. Ayer
Treasurer	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary	Florence E. Carr
Librarian and Curator	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot	Anna P. Vinal	L. Roger Wentworth
-------------------	---------------	--------------------

## Committee on Historic Sites

J. O. Hayden, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot	Edward Glines
------------------------	-------------------	---------------

## Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot
W. E. Brigham	Seth Mason

Mrs. J. F. Ayer

## Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman	Edith Hayes	Mrs. Helen Heald
----------------------------	-------------	------------------

## Photographs

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman	James F. Whitney
Albert L. Haskell	

## Press and Clippings

W. P. Jones, Chairman	Anna P. Vinal
Mrs. Emma Prichard Hadley	Lucy M. Stone

## Committee on Publications

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman	Frank M. Hawes
Sara A. Stone	Samuel Earle

## Military Records

J. H. Dusseault, Chairman	Alfred M. Cutler	Mary A. Haley
---------------------------	------------------	---------------

## House

Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman	Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham	Mrs. E. F. Hammond
---------------------------	-----------------------	--------------------

## Hospitality

Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury
Mrs. Mae D. Frazar	



# Historic Leaves

Published by the

Somerville Historical Society

Somerville, Mass.

January, 1906

Vol. IV

No. 1



## CONTENTS

SAMUEL PHIPPS  
THE CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS

Capt. George A. Gordon 77  
Frank Mortimer Hawes 95

# HISTORIC LEAVES

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY THE

Somerville Historical Society

19 CENTRAL STREET

Somerville, Mass.

Subscription Price, One Dollar a Year, postpaid.

Single copies, 25 cents.

For sale at the Society's Rooms or by Members of the Publication Committee.  
Exchange list in charge of the Librarian and Curator Alfred  
Morton Cutler, 234 Medford St., to whom all communica-  
tions regarding exchanges should be addressed.

## PUBLICATION COMMITTEE

SAM WALTER Foss, Chairman

FRANK M. HAWES, *ex-officio* SARA A. STONE

SAMUEL EARL



# HISTORIC LEAVES

---

---

VOL. IV.

JANUARY, 1906

No. 4

---

---

SAMUEL PHIPPS

*An Early Resident of Somerville Territory*

By Capt. George A. Gordon

(Read before Somerville Historical Society December 20, 1905.)

The presence of so many friends, acquaintances, and fellow-citizens is encouraging, as well as complimentary. I must regret that so many will be disappointed,—not finding in the theme of my paper this evening, or in its treatment, the interesting relation hoped for.

I come not before you this evening to give instruction to you, whose object and aim is the acquisition and dispensing of local history; but I beg to call to your minds that, at the dates covered by the theme of my paper, Charlestown and Cambridge were contiguous in territory, with a common boundary reaching from Miller's river to Burlington, Charlestown bounded with Lynn on the northeast, and with Boston on the Mystic river, as Chelsea was early a part of Boston. This most ancient town of Middlesex County was the third settlement in the limits of Massachusetts, outside of Plymouth plantation. The first Court of Assistants was held at Charlestown. In every line of business and commerce Charlestown held prominence.

Phipps is a contraction in speech of Philip, unknown in England before the Conquest, and one of many forms indicative of the popularity of the fifth apostle. The Phipps were seated in the shires of Gloucester, Worcester, Warwick, and Northampton. They bore arms and were esteemed among the gentry. The immediate family, whence the Phipps of Charlestown derived issue, were of Wiltshire, where various members of the race are on record as sheriffs.



Samuel Phipps, town clerk of Charlestown, and his neighbors dwelt within the present limits of Somerville, about 200 years ago, on Mt. Benedict. A portion of his homestead came within that part of the ploughed field which included the location of the Ursuline Convent of 1830. "Dead men tell no tales" is a well-known proverb; but allow me to deny it and to caution you regarding its acceptance. In my own case, I feel better acquainted with Solomon Phipps, carpenter, Samuel Phipps, the register, and Samuel Phipps, the town clerk, with Thomas Danforth, treasurer of the colony, and Francis Foxcroft, recorder, than I do with any considerable number of my fellow-citizens and neighbors. I know their handwriting at a glance, and have a clear and intelligent conception of their careers. The quality of the listening ear modifies the voice of the departed. "They who have ears to hear, let them hear."

Solomon Phipps, the first of the family in New England, was in Charlestown as early as 1640. He was a Wiltshire man, a carpenter by trade. His business was prosperous, and, in 1645, he took an eighth in the new mill which was established at what has since been known as the Mill Pond. Mill street, now extending from Main street to Rutherford avenue, is a survival of the original way to the mill. The rails and grounds of the Eastern freight track, Boston & Maine railroad, now occupy the site of the mill. Mr. Phipps held the property to the last, and divided the same, by his will, between his boys. At this mill Mr. Phipps prepared his lumber for his enterprises. The houses he built were of wood. Some were one, some two stories in height, with low studding, plastered inside, the beams overhead exposed, a large chimney in the centre, and that of the kitchen with a capacious oven beside it. Fuel was plenty, and large amounts were piled in the yards every winter. The homes were plain, built within frugal means, destitute of architecture, and rather evident of poverty of imagination and dearth of culture. The wealthiest inhabitants of Charlestown were the distillers, and the most numerous the bakers. Those who lived beyond the Neck kept horses and wagons, and went into town, usually on horseback, to what is now City square, for the necessities they did not



raise on their lands. No butcher's, milk, fish, grocers', or coal teams made regular daily calls at those remote homesteads. How marked the change to-day! Solomon Phipps, the emigrant, died while his son, afterward the register, was in college. His grave can be shown in the old cemetery in Charlestown. It is in the front row, northwest of the gate, among his neighbors, Greene, Ryall, Peirce, Adams, Kettell, and Bunker, of which the most recent date is 1702. The hard-slate headstone, inscribed 1671, is of a texture likely to last for ages.

Samuel Phipps, the son, was graduated at Harvard College in the class of 1671, the last class under President Chauncy, and the only one in twenty consecutive years to consist of more than ten members. The illustrious member of the class was Samuel Sewall, the judge, who was on the bench at the witchcraft trials, whose diary, long since in print, is of immeasurable value, historically. Proceeding to the degree of Master of Arts, Samuel Phipps assumed the mastership of the grammar school in Charlestown, and taught it ten years. At one time he had fifty-three scholars. At the close of his school he was elected a constable at the town meeting, which he refused. The town insisted. Phipps appealed to the governor, claiming that, as Master of Arts and a grammar school master, "it was unreasonable and not customary to choose persons so qualified and improved." The government excused him, but the town still resolved not to comply with the order. Notwithstanding this breeze, Phipps served against his will, and, in the succeeding year, was town treasurer, and afterward town clerk, selectman many years, and again constable. In 1689, Samuel Phipps was elected county clerk, and served to 1723, and register of probate, 1692 to 1702, and register of deeds, 1693 to 1721. He represented Charlestown in the general court of 1692, the first under the new charter of William and Mary, which erected the colony into a province, with a royal governor. Ten other years Phipps served as representative. In 1704, he was a captain of the foot company at Charlestown.

Captain Phipps was three times married. First, in 1676, to Mary Phillips, a daughter of Henry and Mary (Dwight) Phillips,



the butcher of Dedham and Boston; second, to Katharine Brackenbury, a daughter of John and Annie (Anderson) Brackenbury, of Charlestown; and, third, to Mary Bradley, an Englishwoman from Staffordshire, and the widow of Joseph Lemmon, a shopkeeper of Charlestown. Captain Samuel Phipps died at Charlestown, August 7, 1725, in his seventy-fourth year.

In the last years of the expiring colony, while Samuel Phipps was a selectman of Charlestown, some lovers of old English sports and customs had erected in Charlestown a maypole for the ordinary May festivities. It was cut down. Directly another and bigger pole was erected, and a garland hung upon it. This was not to be endured. Increase Mather called it an abominable shame, a piece of heathenism. Selectman Phipps ordered the town watch to cut the pole down. In the resulting disturbance, the selectman and the captain of an English vessel in the port, the frigate Kingfisher, came to blows. The sailor captain promptly entered a complaint before the magistrate, and the selectman was put under bonds to the next court. The case never came to trial.

Charlestown "beyond the Neck" included the elevated land on the river side of the present Broadway and seat of the Ten Hills Farm, which had long been in private ownership, the "stinted commons" being on the southerly side of Broadway, and extending to the Cambridge line, "stinted" meaning bounded by defined limits. That was done in 1637. These commons lay between "the Neck, Menotomy's river, and the farms of Medford and Mr. Winthrop," the ground being reserved for such cattle as "milch cows, working cattle, goats, and calves of the first year."

By the time of the three Samuel Phipps, the commerce which lingered at the port of Charlestown had tended gradually to improve the condition of provincial life. While the country folk were yet content with the wooden plates, bowls, knives, and pewter spoons of the Colonial period, and sanded their floors from the inspiration of cleanliness, the town inhabitants had pewter ware, some crockery and glass. The chair-makers developed an industry in the high-backed, split-bottomed frames,



which succeeded the stools and benches of their grandfathers. In their best rooms were solid chairs and tables, and a few books on shelves. This growth in comforts we learn from the inventories of the estates of the deceased, preserved in files of the county probate court. The domination of the godly was disappearing. The captain or lieutenant of the village was not always the deacon at the meeting house. With the advent of the province came the officials of royal authority, came commissions to the judiciary and the military, came a larger liberality in the thoughts and views of the population. The fisheries brought Spanish dollars or an exchange of commodities from foreign markets, in memory of which, to-day, the codfish hangs in front of the speaker in the people's general court. The settlers were, up to this time, purely English; so much so that the isolated individual of other British races was dubbed the Scotchman, the Irishman, the Welshman. Because they were English, they succeeded. Our annual orators on Forefathers' Day tell us the colonists succeeded because they were Puritan. I crave permission to dissent. I tell you nay. It was the stubborn nerve and fibre of the Englishman from Wiltshire, from Staffordshire, from Devonshire, from Yorkshire, from Essex, and from Sussex, which earned subsistence out of the hard soil, which on the high sea gathered the abundant fish, and, on shore, won an equal distinction and profit in New England rum, ships' masts, and hoop poles. The result is the same in Canada and in New Zealand, in India and in Cape Colony. Mark the contrast with the establishment of the Latin race in the fertile and fruitful zones of the equator. To-day the descendants of the English are building the canal, for the commerce of the world and the blessing of mankind, through the territory the others have held in possession four centuries.

During the closing quarter of the first century of Charlestown's history, that portion of her territory now Somerville had sparsely settled on its two highways, the road to Cambridge and Boston, now Washington street in our city, and the road to Medford and Woburn, now Broadway. A few farmers dwelt on the road to Cambridge, while quite a cluster of dwellings stood



on the higher ground, through which the Medford road ran. Among these was the residence of Samuel Phipps, town clerk of Charlestown, who died suddenly in February, 1731. He was a grandson of Solomon Phipps, the carpenter, and a nephew of Samuel Phipps, the recorder. His father was a son of the carpenter, Joseph Phipps, and his mother, Mary Kettell. Samuel was born 1696, town clerk 1726, and died 1730-1, leaving a widow, Abigail, and five children, Abigail, Joseph, Samuel, Elijah, and Solomon. The widow married Joseph Whittemore, Jr., and died in 1734. Mr. Phipps' real estate lay in three parcels, within the limits of present Somerville, or, as it was then expressed, "in Charlestowne without the neck." An appraisal rehearses and values it, viz.:—

<i>Homestead, 7 acres, 21 rods on the highway leading from Charlestown to Medford, bounded by lands of widow Mary Rand, of Captain Eben Breed, by land of William Hoppin and Meriam Fosket, and by rangeways, at £55 old tenor per acre.....</i>	£392 4s 4½d
<i>Meadow, 4 acres, 54 rods, on same highway, and bounded by lands of Joseph Frothingham, Samuel Hutchinson, Nathaniel Frothingham, and rangeway, at £66 old tenor per acre.....</i>	£266 5s 6d
<i>Pasture, on highway leading from Charlestown to Cambridge, and bounded by land of Michael Brigden and a rangeway, at £35 old tenor per acre .....</i>	£203 4s 4d

The children being young, the estate remained unsettled till the death of the widow, when Samuel Danforth, of Cambridge, the judge of probate, and a kinsman of the family, took charge of and divided the estate, giving a double portion to the eldest son, as was common and legal in those days. His computation is entered at large on the back of the report of the committee on appraisal, and, as it affords a curious example of arithmetic, as then written, we copy the major portion of it. He first foots the several items of the appraisal, £861 14s 2½d, deducting the sum of £14 13s ½d for accrued expenses, among which is given the



following, probably an account of disbursements by the mother, viz.:—

Betty Phips for a paire of Briches and Stockins.....	£1 10s 0d
do for altering seavall things.....	£0 12s 0d
Mrs. Austin for altering a Gound for Abiagail.....	£0 5s 0d
Doct. Greaves when Sollomon Phils Was Sick.....	£1 16s 0d
Esqr Danford when took Gardenship.....	15s

The judge divides the residue, reduced to pence, into six parts, thus: crossing each digit in the dividend as he divides, which mark we omit:—

2541(2 924 (6 82 (3
203294(33882 (2823 (141
66666(1222 (2000
( 111 ( 22

This is readily explainable, though it has an intricate appearance. We leave it for the solution of the reader, as the exercise will contribute to his enjoyment. Such system of ciphering has long since passed out of use and into oblivion.

The guardian's account reads:—

The Acct of What I have paid for the Childeeren of Samll Phipps Lait of Charlestown Desead

To paid to

Mr Storer of Boston for Cloathing.....	£3 18s 2d
Capt Johnson for triming, part for Joseph, part for Samll.....	£1 5s 9d
Mr Josepg Sweatsur for maiking cloaths and finding.....	£2 4s 4d
Mr Rand for three hats and deying Stockings 7-6 and pr Gloves 2.....	£0 17s 6d
Mr. Skotto for maiking cloaths and finding.....	£5 12s 9d

Of Samuel Phipps' children, Joseph became a baker, married Elizabeth Webb, dwelt in Charlestown, and died there in 1795. He was a surety on his mother's bond as administratrix. Elijah married in 1750, and died in 1752 of smallpox. By



order of the selectmen, his body was buried at midnight, for fear of infection.

Samuel died at the age of twenty-one.

Abigail became wife to John Blaney in 1741, and was a widow in 1746.

Solomon was a joiner, married Elizabeth, daughter of Abraham Hill. He died in 1740-12, leaving a widow and three children, Solomon, Elizabeth, and Martha.

Betty Phips, who supplies the "Briches and Stockins," was an aunt to the children, a sister of the deceased town clerk.

Mrs. Austin, who "altered the Gound," was a widow. She made her will July 4, 1745, bequeathing a slave, *Chance*, and £60 to four children, viz.: Thomas, a barber; Josiah, a goldsmith; John, a carver; and Rebecca, who married (1) Joseph Sweetser, (2) Samuel Waite, of Malden.

Dr. Thomas Greaves was the village apothecary, and one of the physicians. He died in 1746, leaving widow, Phebe, and daughter Katharine, wife to James Russell, and daughter Margaret, wife to Samuel Cary.

Of his neighbors, or, at least, his abutters, Mrs. Rand was the widow of John Rand, the maltster, and was born Mehetabel Call, of a well-known Charlestown family. She was the mother of Jonathan Rand, the hatter and dyer, who supplied the hats, stockings, and gloves mentioned in the guardian's account. He was born in 1694, and married Milicent Osterbrook, born in 1699, a daughter of Joseph. They had thirteen children. Jonathan died in 1760, and his widow married, in 1764, John Chamberlin. From 1725 till death Jonathan lived on the lot, now the east side of Thompson square, described as a mansion with seven smokes, a hatter's shop and barn. It extended from Main to Back (now Warren) street.

Captain Eben Breed was a retired master mariner, who gave his name to the elevation on which the battle of Bunker Hill was fought. He was a son of John Breed, who had been a soldier in King Philip's war, and was father to John Breed, the distiller. Breed's Island, northeast of East Boston, takes its name from this family. Captain Breed died in 1754, leaving a large estate,



appraised at £5,647 16s 1d. His will speaks of his son John, resident at Surinam, S. A., and that one's son Ebenezer.

William Hoppin was a tinner, who died a very old man in 1773. The late Rev. Dr. Hoppin, of Christ church, Cambridge, was a great-grandson.

Samuel Hutchinson, the shoemaker, lived on the road to Winter Hill.

Miriam Fosket, born in 1665, Miriam Cleveland, was widow of Thomas Fosket, a brother of Jonathan, who once owned the windmill, which he sold to John Mallet, on the southeast of the range called "Captain Carter's draught." Miriam was widowed in 1694, and died in 1745. She left a landed estate of thirty acres to son John, daughter Miriam, wife to Matthew Leaky, and daughter Abigail, wife to Thomas Powers. The Fosket family have disappeared from Charlestown, and have not been known there for a half-century. Descendants are in Worcester and Berkshire counties.

Joseph Frothingham, hatter, and Nathaniel, painter, were sons of Nathaniel Frothingham, the joiner, who married Hannah Rand, and left her a widow in 1749, with good estate. Their posterity have been among the most notable citizens of Charlestown.

Michael Brigden was a blacksmith, and a deacon in the First church. He died in 1767. His estate suffered a loss of \$500 in the burning of Charlestown by the British in 1775.

Among creditors to the estate we notice the names of Doct. Perkins, Joanna Phillips, Stephen Hall, Edw'd Lutwich, Jerathmeel Pierce, Christfr Blackford, John Smith, Margaret Rush, Dorcas Soley, Margaret Macarty, Jeffs Johnson, John Sprague, Joseph Lenimon, Joseph Stimpson, Dr Thomas Greaves, Doctor Simon Tufts, Meriam Fosket, Jonathan Call, Joseph Frost, Samll Trumbal. Many of these are still represented in the population of Charlestown and its vicinity, as well as those whose names were quoted in the inventory as holding adjacent real estate.

Stephen Hall was a Boston merchant, then meaning an importer who dealt at wholesale. He was a resident in Charles-



town, a son of Stephen Hall, the weaver and painter, who married Grace Willis.

Christopher Blackford was a victualler, who had married Sarah Kettell, a niece of Samuel Phipps' mother. Later he sustained reverses in business.

Jeffs Johnson, son of Zechariah and Elizabeth (Jeffs) Johnson, the brickmaker, was a bookkeeper in His Majesty's service. He married Sarah Orne, of Boston, and settled at Weston.

Edward Lutwyche was the landlord of the Bunch of Grapes tavern, at the head of Mackerel lane and King street, now the corner of State and Kilby streets, in Boston. In memory of the famous inn and the many feasts celebrated there, the present handsome edifice bears a pendent bunch of grapes, carved on the lintel at the corner. Long wharf came up to the head of Mackerel lane, now Doane street, in those days. The Lutwyches were English born and true to their birthright. The son, Edward Goldstone Lutwyche, was a scholarly lawyer, who was settled on or near Brenton's farms on the Merrimac river, where he established a ferry. He remained in the province of New Hampshire till the Revolution. He was colonel of the Fifth New Hampshire regiment of militia. At the outbreak of hostilities, he repaired to Boston and joined General Gage. In 1778, he was proscribed by the general court of New Hampshire, and his property confiscated. Dr. Matthew Thornton, one of the signers of the Declaration, and a busy, prominent politician, thrifty in his graft, purchased Lutwyche's farm, and the ferry has ever since been known as Thornton's. Lutwyche went to Halifax with Lord Howe, was in New York after peace was declared, returned to Nova Scotia, and ended his days there.

The father, Edward Lutwyche, came from Radnor, in Wales, and married, in 1727, Thankful Parmiter, who died in 1734. He retired in 1740 to a fine farm of 160 acres in Hopkinton, and died there in 1747.

There were two McCarty's in Charlestown at the period under review, James and John, and in 1740 Thomas Maccurdy, a stranger, was buried at the town's expense.

Of Doch Perkins we find no trace. The only men of the



name in Charlestown then were shoemakers and blacksmiths, descendants of Abraham Perkins, of Hampton.

Joanna Phillips was the widow of Captain Henry Phillips, merchant, a son of Colonel John and Katharine (Anderson) Phillips, the provincial treasurer and judge. She was a daughter of Hon. Joseph and Sarah (Davison) Lynde. She was twice widowed, having first been the wife of Samuel Everton, captain of the ship, *Augustus Galley*, 148 tons.

Hannah, daughter of Jerathmeel Bowers, of Chelmsford, married Benjamin Pierce, and (2) Captain William Wilson, of Concord. She had a son, Jerathmeel Pierce, who must be the person referred to, for certainly two mortals could not both bear that name in peace in the same community.

John Smith was perhaps the cordwainer who married Anna, daughter of John Whittemore and Sarah (Hall), who became wife to Joseph Frost, as before stated.

Dorcas Soley was a daughter of John and Dorcas (Coffin) Soley, or the widow herself, who was daughter of Nathaniel and Damaris (Gayer) Coffin, a Nantucket sailor.

Thomas Powers, who married a daughter of Miriam Fosket, was a blacksmith. He died in 1759, leaving an estate of £1,057, including a negro woman, named *Essex*.

John Sprague was the gunsmith, son of Jonathan and Mary (Bunker) Sprague. His wife was Elizabeth, a daughter of Ebenezer and Thankful (Benjamin) Austin, the saddler of Charlestown. His father had been a soldier under Maudsley (Moseley) in King Philip's war. He died in 1716, leaving an estate of £5,773. His property was a house, land, and cider mill, "out of neck," house on Main street, smith shop and two tenements on Back street, one-fourth of a pew in the church, etc. His three surviving sons became iron founders. Their descendants settled largely in Malden, where the old soldier of the "Long March," Jonathan, lived.

Joseph Stimpson was the youngest son of Andrew and Abigail (Sweetser) Stimpson, housewright and shopkeeper. His grandfather Andrew was from Newcastle-on-Tyne, and wrote his name "Steuenson." To-day it is called Stephenson, Stevenson,



Stimson, and Stimpson. Joseph was graduated at Harvard in 1720, became a schoolmaster, studied divinity, was ordained and settled as pastor of the Second church, Malden, where he died in 1752.

Joseph Sweetser, who married Rebecca Austin, was a currier, the only child of Joseph and Elizabeth (White) Austin, a heelmaker in Boston. He died early, leaving two sons, and his widow married Samuel Waite, and died in 1750.

Samuel Trumbull was a tanner, son of the impressed seaman, John, and Mary (Jones) Trumbull. He owned the house of the emigrant grandfather, John Trumbull, captain of the ships *Mary* and *Blossom*, other houses, lands, wharves, still house, and tannery. He died in 1759. His son John followed the business of his father, as a tanner; so did James; but Timothy became a distiller, and married Frances, a daughter of Joseph Phipps, the baker.

John Wood, the glazier, was son of Joseph and Mary (Blaney) Wood, and brother of Joseph, who was killed by the Indians at Rutland in 1734. John married Elizabeth, daughter of Deacon John and Hepzibah (Billings) Wood, of Cambridge. He learned his trade of his father-in-law, removed to Newburyport, and died there in 1786.

Samuel Sweetser was a son of the eminent Baptist, Benjamin Sweetser, whose wife was a sister to Rev. Michael Wigglesworth, of Malden, born in 1666, married at Malden Elizabeth, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Stower) Sprague, of Malden. They dwelt at Charlestown and Malden, where both were buried, she in 1752, he in 1757.

Joseph Lemmon was a merchant, and treasurer of the town, son of Joseph and Mary (Bradley) Lemmon. His widowed mother became the last wife to the town clerk's uncle, Samuel Phipps. His wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Eleazar and Ann (Foster) Phillips, a victualler and prosperous business man in Charlestown; owned wharf, slaughter house, warehouse, farms, wood lots, and negroes.

Matthew Leaky was a laborer in Boston, who married a daughter of and was administrator on the estate of the widow Miriam Fosket.



Ab. Bunker was Abigail, widow of Captain Benjamin Bunker, the innkeeper. She was a daughter of John and Anna (Carter) Fowle, the tanner.

Jonathan Call was a baker, son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Croswell) Call. His place was near the Neck, resting on the western slope of Bunker Hill. By his wife, Sarah Boylston, he had a family of sixteen children. He was the fourth generation of Calls in Charlestown who had been bakers, as was his brother, Caleb.

Joseph Frost was a native of Billerica, son of Dr. Samuel Frost. He married the widow of John Whittemore, the turner, who was a daughter of Richard Hall, of Dorchester. She died in 1716, and Joseph married (2) Hannah, daughter of Joseph and Hannah Easterbrook. In 1740 Mr. Frost, with his family, removed to Sherburn.

John Goodwin is indeterminate, there were so many of him: John, the housewright, of Cambridge, Malden, and Charlestown; John, the perruquier; John, called *tertius*; and John, a sea captain.



## THE CHARLESTOWN SCHOOLS

From 1819-20 (Continued).

Frank Mortimer Hawes

The trustees for the year 1817 were Rev. William Collier, Abram R. Thompson, M. D., Captain Nehemiah Wyman, David Stetson, Isaac Tufts, Peter Tufts, Jr., Elias Phinney.

1818, Rev. William Collier, A. R. Thompson, M. D., Isaac Tufts, Elias Phinney, James K. Frothingham, Joel Tufts, John Soley.

1819, Rev. Edward Turner, Samuel Payson, Isaac Tufts, Elias Phinney, James K. Frothingham, Joel Tufts, John Soley.

1820, the same.

1821, the same, except that Philemon R. Russell succeeds Joel Tufts.

1822, Rev. Edward Turner, Samuel Payson, Elias Phinney, Rev. James Walker, Joseph Phipps, Samuel P. Teel, Nathan Tufts, 2d.

1823, Rev. Edward Turner, Rev. James Walker, Joseph Phipps, Nathan Tufts, 2d, James Russell, Samuel Gardner, Leonard M. Parker.

1824, Rev. James Walker, Joseph Phipps, James Russell, Samuel Gardner, Leonard M. Parker, Chester Adams, Thomas Hooper.

1825, James Russell, L. M. Parker, Chester Adams, Rev. Henry Jackson, Lot Pool, Edward Cutter, Rev. Walter Balfour.

1826, Chester Adams, Hall J. Kelley, Nathaniel H. Henchman, Rev. James Walker, Benjamin Whipple, William S. Phipps, Rev. Henry Jackson.

1827, Rev. James Walker, Chester Adams, Lot Pool, Benjamin Whipple, H. J. Kelley, Josiah S. Hurd, Henry Jaques.

1828, Benjamin Whipple, Rev. James Walker, Chester Adams, Rev. Henry Jackson, Luke Wyman, J. S. Hurd, Robert G. Tenney.

1829, the same.

Our gleanings from the trustees' records and from their annual reports have been brought down to the spring of 1819.



May 8 of that year Samuel Payson, Elias Phinney, and Joel Tufts were appointed to select a location for the new house without the Neck, and a week later it was voted that the new Milk Row School be erected where the former one stood. Isaac Tufts and James K. Frothingham were the building committee, and it was decided to build of wood.

This house was completed in October. Its sides were filled in with brick, and it was "finished in a plain, neat style, with two coats of paint on the outside"; the cost was \$675. October 22 the school, which was in charge of Miss Charlotte Remington, was visited by Messrs. Turner, Isaac Tufts, and Frothingham. They were highly gratified with the specimens of the children's improvement, particularly in reading. This was the first examination in the new building. The winter term (1819-'20) was taught by Daniel Russell, and March 20 the school passed an examination "which was highly creditable to themselves and their instructor." There were present Messrs. Turner, Isaac and Joel Tufts, Frothingham, "and a large number of interested spectators." The whole number on the rolls was 92; present on this occasion, 35 girls and 26 boys.

October 13, the school at Winter Hill, under Miss Julia Remington, was closed. Owing to unfavorable weather, the examination which was to have been held was not attended by any of the board.

Mr. Gates, of the Neck School, resigned, much to the regret of the committee, and was succeeded, June 11, by Charles Fiske, who taught only to December 11, when Rev. William Collier was engaged. In September the lower floor of this schoolhouse was finished suitably for a schoolroom, and it was occupied by a school of small children, with a female for instructress.

Schools for poor children were held from May to November. These were in different sections of the town, and were visited November 13. The trustees found 26 under Mrs. Rea, 40 under Miss Susan Wyman, and 30 under Miss Mary Frothingham, 96 in all. These teachers received \$2.50 per week for 30 scholars.

The school for girls (over seven years of age) was kept six months, and also closed in November. In April (1820) it was



voted to pay Miss Carlisle, the assistant, one-half as much as to Mr. Prentiss, the principal.

October 20, J. M. Wilkins, of No. 1, resigned "suddenly," much to the regret of the board. He received their commendation. Edward Sawyer was appointed his successor, at a salary of \$800, "if he continues two years; if less than that time, only \$700 per annum." Later we learn that he received the larger sum. At the examination the school of Messrs. Sawyer and Gordon was highly praised. At the last visit of the trustees, there were 685 children in all the schools (not primary). Of these, 511 were present, as follows: At No. 1, 200; at the female school, 101; at No. 2, kept by Rev. Mr. Collier, 90; at No. 3, under Daniel Russell, 61; at No. 4, under Simeon Booker, 33; and at No. 5, under Charles Wyman, 26.

A reduction of salaries having been agreed upon, the sum needed for the current year will be \$3,100. No. 5 will need repairs amounting to about \$75. Joel Tufts and Mr. Frothingham are authorized to attend to these repairs. May 1, 1820, Isaac and Joel Tufts are appointed to establish summer schools without the Neck.

March 1, 1820, the trustees by vote established the holidays and vacations for the school year as follows:—

1. Wednesday and Saturday afternoons of each week.
2. The afternoon of the annual training in May.
3. General Election week, four days.
4. Artillery Day.
5. Commencement Day at Harvard College and the day following.
6. Day of military review, when helden in Charlestown.
7. From Wednesday noon immediately preceding the annual Thanksgiving to Monday morning following.
8. Christmas Day.

Schools to commence the first of May.

1820-'21.

May 23, 1820, a communication was received from Mrs. Sarah Adams (of Winter Hill), and was placed on file. This was



probably a petition for a primary school in her section of the town, and we have been given to understand that one was established about this time. It was kept in the old Tufts house, the home of Miss Abigail and Edmund Tufts.

Salaries of all male instructors, except Mr. Sawyer's, were reduced to \$600. "The established salary had been £200, and, in addition, a grant had been made which augmented the compensation to \$800." Mr. Sawyer's salary was not changed, because he had been engaged for two years at that rate. After a highly commendatory paragraph concerning this gentleman, the report adds: "Nor are the services of Mr. Gordon less important." November 8 we read that Mr. Gordon is to receive his £200 per annum and a grant of \$20 for the last quarter. Unforeseen expenses, to the amount of \$385, had exceeded the appropriation; the roof of schoolhouse No. 1 had to be shingled at an expense of \$111, and in January the same building was damaged by fire to the amount of \$65.

The female school opened May 1, and continued six months, under Mr. Whitney and Miss Carlisle. In May, 1821, before the annual meeting, this school had opened with two new teachers, Henry Bartlett and Miss Ann D. Sprague.

At the Neck Mr. Collier's resignation took effect June 20. After a short vacation there, Mr. Gragg was engaged (\$600), and began to teach July 7. "Miss Ann Brown left the occupation of the schoolroom at the Neck October 23, and Miss Sebrina Johnson engaged it on the same conditions which Miss Brown has improved it, to commence this day." Schools for poor children have been kept six months by Mrs. Rea, Mrs. Thompson, and Miss Jefferds; 68 children attended.

November 8, the money for schools without the Neck for winter schooling was apportioned as follows: \$140 for No. 3; \$125 for No. 4; \$85 for No. 5. The whole number of school children, "outside of the women's schools" (primary) was 779 at the time of their examination. Present at these examinations: at No. 1 (Messrs. Sawyer and Gordon's), 203; at the female school (Mr. Whitney and Miss Carlisle's), 122; at Mr. Gragg's, 65; at Mr. Parker's (Milk Row), 67; at Mr. Colburn's (No. 4),



37; at Mr. Wyman's (No. 5), 26. Mr. Colburn's school was examined March 22. Out of the whole number of 54, there were present 22 girls and 15 boys. "The school was addressed by Rev. Mr. Turner, and closed with prayer." No 3 at Milk Row<sup>s</sup> was examined March 31; whole number under Mr. Parker, 100, but only 67 were present. The school was addressed by Mr. Turner, and closed with prayer.

Of bills approved April 9, 1821, Miss Rebecca Cutter received \$57.75. She was probably one of the summer teachers outside the Neck. The report says that schoolhouse No. 5 is a small, old building, considerably out of repair, and quite uncomfortable for the winter season. The committee is of the opinion that it is not worth repairing. "At solicitation, we recommend an appropriation." In consequence, the town voted \$250 for the erection of a new building there, it being understood that the inhabitants will add to this sum. Joel Tufts resigns in May, and he is excused with the thanks of the town for his services. Philemon R. Russell is chosen to take his place. The annual report is signed by James K. Frothingham, secretary of the board of trustees.

1821-'22.

May 14, 1821. Voted that Messrs. Tufts and Russeil establish summer schools without the Neck, as in former years; that Messrs. Turner, Russell, and Tufts be a committee to attend to the erection of the new schoolhouse in Gardner's Row (No. 5), "agreeable to the vote of the town"; June 15, that Messrs. Turner and Russell examine No. 4 schoolhouse, "to see if it is necessary to have new paint." August 17, Samuel Gardner proposed to convey a lot of land a few rods south of the present schoolhouse lot (No. 5), he to have the old lot in exchange. A deed was taken from him for the new lot, with the dimensions of thirty feet on the road, and thirty-six feet, twenty-five feet, and forty feet, respectively, on the other three sides. We are favored with a complete expense account for building this new house, dated January 21, 1822;—



Gardner and Fay's bill for labor.....	\$145.76
Sarah Cutter, for brick.....	4.00
John Fisk, for labor.....	3.00
David Devens, lumber.....	60.41
Ephraim Stevens, lumber.....	80.37
Devens and Thompson, for hardware and glass.....	39.50
William Flagg, for labor.....	10.50
Jonathan Gibbs, lumber.....	4.44
Samuel Gardner, labor.....	25.00
Elijah Vose, Jr., stove and funnel.....	19.16
	\$392.14

This amount exceeded the appropriation, \$142.14, "and this sum has been drawn from the treasury."

As Mr. Gragg resigned at the Neck school in June, Mr. Samuel Moody took charge July 7. Up to that time, "the school was in a state of bad discipline," but now the conditions are excellent.

The schools for poor children were kept the past season by Mrs. Rea, Mrs. Thompson, and Miss Jefferds, to the full satisfaction of the board. One hundred children have attended, "and the improvement has been as good as could be expected from children in their station. For it is with regret we are under the necessity of saying that there is a great want of attention in the parents of these children, in not seeing that their children, who are entitled to this privilege, regularly attend the schools established for their advantage."

The schools for females, under Mr. Bartlett and Miss Sprague, were closed the last of October. "We are pleased to announce that Miss Sprague is again engaged for the ensuing season." Mr. Sawyer (No. 1) is highly praised, and his salary raised \$100. It is recommended that Mr. Gordon's salary be increased a similar amount. "He has been in the school for six years past, teaching writing and arithmetic."

The schools without the Neck were examined April 9, 1822, but no return was made, except of school No. 3, under Mr.



Parker, at which some handsome specimens of writing were particularly noticed. The number present, out of a total of 119, was 32 boys and 40 girls. The whole number of school children—outside the primary departments—was about 750, or 66 more than attended last year; \$3,400 will be necessary for the coming year.

1822-'23.

At town meeting May 6, 1822, John Soley, Philemon R. Russell, Isaac Tufts, and J. K. Frothingham declined to serve on the board of trustees. They received the thanks of the town for their services, and Rev. James Walker, Nathan Tufts, 2d, Joseph Phipps, and Samuel P. Teel were elected to their places. Mr. Phipps was chosen secretary. The town also voted to buy the land, with the building thereon, now occupied by the female school, but Mr. Collier declined to sell for the present.

May 11, 1822. Voted that Nathan Tufts attend to the care of the female school at Winter Hill and the school at Milk Row; that Samuel Teel have charge of the upper schools. October 22, these two gentlemen were empowered to dispose of the old schoolhouse at No. 5.

The school for females opened May 1, under Josiah Moody and Miss Sprague. In July Mr. Moody was succeeded by Melzer Flagg. The school closed the last of October. It was opened again May 5, 1823, with Luther S. Cushing and Miss Sprague as teachers. In July, No. 2, at the Neck, was vacated by Samuel Moody, and Joseph Reynolds was appointed to succeed him. Schools for poor children were kept six months in different parts of the town, under the care of Mrs. Rea, Mrs. Thompson, and Miss Jefferds. "About 100 children had this privilege."

The school at Milk Row (No. 3), under the charge of Mr. Blanchard, was examined in April, and was found in a good state of improvement. Forty-four were present out of a total of about 100. Present: Messrs. Turner, Walker, and Tufts. No. 4 and No. 5, at the upper part of the town, as far as returns have been made, have been satisfactorily kept. The whole number of children, about 760. Present at the last examination: at No. 1,



191; at the female school, 197; at No. 2, 66; at No. 3, 44; at 4 and 5, about 83. Three thousand five hundred dollars will be needed for the coming year.

The following vote, passed April 25, 1823, is interesting: "Voted that there shall be but one public examination of each school in a year, to take place some time between the fifteenth and the end of October, and that the several masters be instructed to make this examination rather an exhibition of the schools in the higher classes than a regular recitation of the whole school, and that means be used to induce the parents and others interested to attend the examination, care being taken that the exercises be generally interesting from their excellence and not wearisome from their number or length."

1823-'24.

School No. 2, at the Neck, was vacated in July by Joseph Reynolds, and Thomas Thompson was engaged for the month of August. September 1, Henry Adams was engaged, and began his labors there, at a salary of \$600. In October the school in district No. 1, under Messrs. Sawyer and Gordon, was examined and gave satisfaction. October 20, Cornelius Walker succeeded Mr. Sawyer as teacher. The female school, under Luther S. Cushing and Miss Sprague, was kept six months. The examination was highly gratifying, especially Miss Sprague's work. May 3, 1824, this school opened again, under Samuel Bartlett and Miss Sprague. The schools for poor children were also kept six months; they were examined and approved by the trustees. The school in Milk Row at its examination was found under good government and improvement.

October 31, Messrs. Turner and Nathan Tufts examined the school at Winter Hill, taught by Miss Hobbs. The number present was 41 out of a total of 50. "The scholars were examined in reading, spelling, writing, English grammar, geography, and rhetoric. In all which they have made such attainments as prove their studious habits and unremitting attention. The school was particularly distinguished for reading in a clear, distinct, and audible manner. The order and discipline were excellent."



"October 24, a remonstrance came from John Tufts and others in Ward 3 against the employment of Mr. Nathan Blanchard another winter. It was voted that, though they regret the existence of such an opposition, the trustees do not consider the case so clearly made out as to justify their rescinding the engagement which the trustees in that ward have already made. Voted that the secretary (Mr. Phipps) furnish Mr. Blanchard with a copy of this vote and the remonstrance, with the signatures thereto."

The petition of John Tufts and others, praying for the erection of a schoolhouse at some convenient place on or near the road leading from the neck of land to the Powder House, was referred to a committee consisting of Mr. Turner and Mr. Parker. Their investigations give us some interesting information:—

"The whole number of scholars at Milk Row is about 130. The distance of travel for those living on Winter Hill road, when following the Cambridge road, is over one and one-half miles; when going across lots, one mile. The distance is so great either way, and the traveling so bad across lots, especially during the winter, that a large portion of those living on that road cannot attend school. The number of scholars living on the Winter Hill road who will be accommodated by the erection of a new schoolhouse is about 55, which will leave for the present Milk Row School about 75. Again, the school at the Neck is now large and constantly growing, and it would be very advantageous to lessen the number by taking therefrom all those living beyond the Canal bridge, amounting to about 20. By annexing these to the contemplated school, the number there would be about 75. In addition, the trustees would also state that for several years past it has been necessary to employ a schoolmistress for the accommodation of those living on the Winter Hill road, and the rent of a room for this purpose has been about \$25 per year, which is not far from the interest of such a sum as would be requisite to build. The recent establishment of factories at Milk Row will much tend to increase the scholars of that school, which, together with the ordinary growth



of the town, will render the formation of a new district and the erection of a new schoolhouse, if not at this moment, surely within a short period, absolutely necessary."

February 16, 1824, it was voted to refer to the selectmen at town meeting this petition of the "inhabitants living from Mr. Joseph Adams', Senior, on Winter Hill down to Richard's tavern at the Neck." April 14, Messrs. Parker, Tufts, and Phipps were a committee appointed for contracting with some suitable person for erecting a schoolhouse on Winter Hill road. Jeremy Wilson was engaged to build a house on the Pound lot, thirty feet by twenty-four feet, at a cost of \$500. At town meeting, May 3, 1824, the committee on new school building report that it will be completed in about twenty days.

April 9, Milk Row School was examined by Messrs. Parker, Tufts, and Phipps, and a number of visitors. The government appeared very good. The scholars were examined in reading, spelling, grammar, writing, geography, and ciphering, "and some of their branches was very well." The number of children present was 56, out of a total of 107 belonging. They were addressed by Mr. Parker.

1824-'25.

As Nathan Tufts, 2d, and Rev. Edward Turner resigned, Chester Adams and Thomas Hooper "were chosen in their room." This was at the town meeting held May 3, 1824, when it was also voted to district the town for the purpose of establishing primary schools for children between the ages of four and seven, the trustees to report on the same at the next March meeting. School No. 4, near Alewife ("elewive") bridge, was to be superintended by James Russell; No. 5 by Samuel Gardner; No. 3 by Messrs. Hooper and Phipps. They were also to have charge of the new school on the Pound lot.

November 2, 1824, Robert Gordon, of the grammar school, is spoken of as lately deceased, and the vacancy is supplied by engaging Peter Conant.

It was voted at the May meeting that the female school on Austin street be kept through the year, instead of six months. Mr. Barrett (?) and Miss Sprague have continued here and given



general and great satisfaction. As the lease for this building will soon expire, it is advisable to purchase the site, or one more eligible, on which to build.

Henry Adams resigned at school No. 3 in June, when Samuel Bigelow was engaged to fill the vacancy. He has done much to raise the character of the school.

The new school on Winter Hill road was opened June 14, 1824, under the care of Miss Hobbs. This school and the one at Milk Row, under Miss Eliza Wayne, were closed in October (examined Wednesday, October 13). At the former 32 boys and 28 girls, or 60 out of a total of 73, were present, mostly young scholars. "Their performances were respectable." Present: Rev. James Walker, the president of the board, Messrs. Adams, Hooper, Phipps, and some visitors. The same gentlemen attended to the Milk Row School, where 16 out of a total of 80 pupils were present. "Their appearance and performance was well; in writing, geography, and grammar very well. Some samples of needle work, with baskets, etc., was exhibited, all neatly executed." Michael Coombs was engaged to teach the winter school at No. 3, and as it was decided to have a male teacher at the new school for four months, Messrs. Walker and Parker engaged H. F. Leonard to teach there, at \$30 per month, to begin November 15. Mr. Coombs' school was visited March 25. "Their reading, spelling, and other branches were respectable." Messrs. Adams, Hooper, Phipps, Rev. Mr. Fay, and a number of visitors were present. The school was closed with remarks by Mr. Adams and prayer by Mr. Fay. The schools in Wards 4 and 5 have been kept the usual time and with acceptance.

In considering the subject of districting the town for the establishment of primary schools, the trustees recommend that they be placed, (1) at the junction of Wapping street and Salem turnpike; (2) on Town Hill; (3) on Union street; (4) on Cordis street; (5) on Salem street; (6) at the Neck; (7) at Chelsea point. "Six schools may be sufficient, but it must depend on the number that may still be taught in private schools. It is estimated that 50 children in each school may be taught to advan-



tage, and perhaps 60 may be permitted to attend. The salary of the instructors, with room rent and fuel, would be about \$225."

February 25, 1825, the following rules for the schools within the peninsula were adopted: The hours for school shall be from 8 to 11 and 2 to 5; but from October to April, 9 to 12 and 2 to 5, except that during the shortest days the schools may be closed at sunset.

There shall be two visitations made,—from the middle to the end of April, and from the middle to the end of October.

Books recommended: Fourth class, the spelling book and "Beauties of the Bible"; third class, the same, and Murray's Introduction to his English Reader, Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy; second class, Murray's English Reader, Murray's English Grammar and Exercises, abridged by Alger, Walker's Dictionary (abridged); first class, American First Class Book, Walker's Dictionary (abridged), Murray's English Grammar and Exercises, or the abridgment by Alger, Morse's School Geography and Atlas. The following arrangement is made for the boys at No. 1: Arithmetic—Robinson's Elements, Robinson's American Arithmetic (or Daboll's may be used), also Colburn's Mental Arithmetic.

Holidays: Wednesday and Saturday afternoons; Election week; Thanksgiving Day and the remainder of the week; Commencement Day and the remainder of the week; Christmas Day; Fast Day; first Monday in June; Seventeenth of June; Fourth of July; and the day next after the semi-annual examinations.

(To be continued.)



# INDEX

Adams, 79.  
Adams, Ashur, 45.  
Adams, Chester, 90, 99.  
Adams, Hannah, 18.  
Adams, Henry, 97, 100.  
Adams, Joseph, 99.  
Adams, Joseph, Esq., 74.  
Adams, Captain Nathan, 41.  
Adams, Mrs. Sarah, 92.  
Adams, Zabdiel, 44.  
Alewife Bridge, 44, 45, 99.  
Alewife Brook, 5, 12, 17, 18, 22, 66.  
Alewife Brook School, 14, 16.  
Alger, — 101.  
Alger, Israel, 67, 68.  
American First Class Book, 101.  
American Tube Works, 8.  
Andrews, Abraham, A. B., 68, 69, 70.  
Antigua, 23.  
Anti-slavery Society, 26.  
Arlington, Mass., 5, 14, 65.  
Atonement, The, 2.  
Augusta, Ga., 27, 34.  
Austin, Mrs., 83, 84.  
Austin, Ebenezer, 87.  
Austin, Elizabeth, 87.  
Austin, Elizabeth (Whlte), 88.  
Austin, John, 84.  
Austin, Joseph, 88.  
Austin, Josiah, 84.  
Austin, Rebecca, 84, 88.  
Austin Street, Somerville, 99.  
Austin, Thankful (Benjamin), 87.  
Austin, Thomas, 84.  
Austin, William, 64.  
Auxillary Educational League, 2.  
Babcock, Henry H., 10.  
Back Street, Charlestown, 84, 87.  
Balfour, Rev. Walter, 90.  
Baltimore, Md., 27.  
Bangor, Me., 25.  
Banks, General, 53, 54.  
Barrett, Mr., 99.  
Bartlett, Catherine, 30.  
Bartlett, Dr., 68, 69.  
Bartlett, Henry, 93, 95.  
Bartlett, George, 39, 44, 64, 66.  
Bartlett, Josiah, 42, 63, 65.  
Bartlett, Hon. Josiah, 39, 65.  
Bartlett, Samuel, 97.  
Baton Rouge, 53.  
Beacon Street, Boston, 27.  
"Beauties of the Bible," 101.  
Belknap, Ruth, 65.  
Bennett, Clark, 47.  
Bennett, John, 68, 71.  
Berkshire County, Mass., 85.  
Botsey, 23.  
Bigelow, Dr., 13.  
Bigelow, Samuel, 100.  
Bingham Hospital for Incurables, 2.  
Blackford, Christfr., 85, 86.  
Blanchard, Mr., 26.  
Blanchard, Nathan, 98.  
Blaney, John, 84.  
Blodgett, Mehitable, 20.  
Blood, Mr., 45.  
Blossom (ship), 88.  
Boggs, Captain, 53.  
Booker, Simeon, 92.  
Bonner, Miss Eliza, 47.  
Bonner, William, 47.  
Boston, Mass., 1, 6, 10, 26, 38, 77, 79,  
80, 81, 83, 86, 87.  
Boston Branch Library, 65.  
Boston Club, The, 2.  
Boston & Maine R.R., 78.  
Bowers, Hannah, 87.  
Bowers, Jerathmeel, 87.  
Boyington, Sarah, 89.  
Brackenbury, Annie (Anderson), 80.  
Brackenbury, John, 80.  
Brackenbury, Katherine, 80.  
Bradley, Mary, 80.  
Breed, Eben, 21.  
Breed, Captain Eben, 82, 84.  
Breed, Ebenezer, 85.  
Breed's Island, 84.  
Breed, John, 84, 85.  
Trenton's Farms, 86.  
Bridge, Matthew, 44, 63.  
Bridgen, Michael, 82, 84.  
Broadway, Somerville, 6, 18, 80, 81.  
Bromfield, John, 40.  
Brookline, Mass., 1.  
Brooklyn, The, 51.  
Brown, Miss Ann, 93.  
Bryant, William Cullen, 11.  
Buchanan, J., Esq., 72.  
Buchtel College, 2.  
Buck, Lieutenant-Colonel, 55.  
Bunch of Grapes Tavern, 86.  
Bunker, 79.  
Bunker, Abigail, 89.  
Bunker, Captain Benjamin, 80.  
Bunker Hill, 17, 84, 89.  
Burlington, Mass., 77.  
Butler, General, 27, 31, 32, 49, 51, 52,  
53, 55.

Call, Caleb, 21, 89.  
Call, Elizabeth (Croswell), 89.  
Call, Jonathan, 85, 89.  
Call, Mehitable, 84.  
Call, Thomas, 89.  
Cambridge, 5, 6, 12, 73, 77, 81, 82, 88,  
89.  
Cambridge Road, The, 98.  
Campbell, Samuel, 71, 73.  
Canada, 81.  
Canal Bridge, The, 98.  
Canal Street, New Orleans, La., 54.  
Cape Colony, 81.  
Cape Fear River, 33, 34.  
Capen, Elmer Hewitt, 1-3.  
Capen, Rosamond Edwards, 1.  
Capen, Ruth Paul, 1.  
Capen, Samuel Paul, 1.  
"Celtic Carter's Draught," 85.  
Carlisle, Miss S., 73, 92, 93.



Cary, Samuel, 84.  
 Central Hill, Somerville, 7.  
 Central Street, Somerville, 7.  
 Chamberlain, John, 84.  
 Chamber, Rev. A. St. John, 1.  
 Chance, 81.  
 Charles River, 4.  
 Charlestown, Mass., 4, 5, 6, 7, 14, 18, 19, 23, 38, 42, 43, 63, 64, 65, 66, 72, 73, 77, 78, 80, 82, 83, 85, 88, 89, 92.  
 Charlestown Neck, 4.  
 Charlestown Schools after 1793, 38-46.  
 Charlestown Schools after 1812, 63-71.  
 Charlestown Schools from 1819-20, 90-101.  
 Charlestown Schools without the Peninsula, 14-22.  
 Chapman, Jonathan, 41.  
 Chapman, Richard, 41.  
 Charter of William and Mary, 79.  
 Chauncy, President, 79.  
 Chelmsford, Mass., 87.  
 Chelsea, Mass., 38, 77.  
 Chelsea Point, 100.  
 Chicago, Ill., 8.  
 Christ Church, Cambridge, Mass., 85.  
 City Square, Charlestown, Mass., 63, 78.  
 Clark, Joseph, 47.  
 Clark, Joseph H., 47.  
 Cleveland, Miriam, 85.  
 Coffin, Damaris (Gayer), 87.  
 Coffin, Nathaniel, 87.  
 Colburn's Mental Arithmetic, 101.  
 Colburn, Mr., 93, 94.  
 College Avenue, 14.  
 College Hill, 6.  
 Collier, Rev. William, 64, 66, 67, 72, 73, 90, 91, 92, 93, 96.  
 Conant, Peter, 90.  
 Concord, Mass., 87.  
 Concord Street, 7.  
 Coombs, Michael, 100.  
 Cordis, Captain, 19.  
 Cordis Street, 100.  
 Court of Assistants, 77.  
 Cox, Lemuel, 44.  
 Cummings' First Lessons in Geography and Astronomy, 101.  
 Cushing, Luther S., 96, 97.  
 Cutter, Ebenezer, 64.  
 Cutter, Edward, 16, 90.  
 Cutter, Fitch, 16.  
 Cutter, Miss Rebecca, 94.  
 Cutter, Lieutenant Samuel, 16, 19.  
 Cutter, Sarah, 95.  
 Daboll's Arithmetic, 101.  
 Dahlgren Guns, 58.  
 Danford, Esq., 83.  
 Danforth, Samuel, 82.  
 Danforth, Thomas, 78.  
 Dartmouth College, 70.  
 Davis, Jefferson, 62.  
 Davis, Mary B., 10.  
 Dean Academy, 2.  
 Dedham, Mass., 80.  
 Delta Chapter of Massachusetts, 2.  
 Devens, David, 64, 95.  
 Devens, Richard, 22, 39, 40, 42, 63, 65.  
 Devens, Richard, Esq., 39, 40.  
 Devens, Hon. Richard, 65, 66.  
 Devonshire, Eng., 81.  
 Dexter, Samuel, 22, 39, 40.  
 Dexter, Samuel, Esq., 39.  
 Dixon, Mr., 72.  
 Doane Street, Boston, 86.  
 Dodge, David, 68, 69, 70, 71.  
 Dodge, Horace, 71.  
 Dorchester, Mass., 89.  
 Dow, Brigadier-General Neal, 50.  
 Dow, Colonel, 27, 50.  
 Dudley, General, 53.  
 East Boston, 84.  
 East Somerville, 8.  
 Edgerly, Edward Everett, 10.  
 Edwards, Mary Lincoln, 1.  
 Elliot, Charles D., 23.  
 Elm Street, 7.  
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 11.  
 Emerson, Rev. William, 6.  
 Encyclopædia Britannica, 2.  
 Endicott, 4.  
 England, 5.  
 Essex, 87.  
 Essex, Eng., 81.  
 Esterbrook, Hannah, 89.  
 Esterbrook, Joseph, 84, 89.  
 Esterbrook, Millicent, 84.  
 Everton, Samuel, 87.  
 "Farewell Song to the Lane, A," 9, 10.  
 Farragut, Admiral, 49, 50, 51, 57.  
 Fay, 95.  
 Fay, Rev. Mr., 100.  
 Fellows, Nathan, 47.  
 Fifth New Hampshire Regiment, 86.  
 Fiske, Charles, 91.  
 Fisk, John, 95.  
 Pittsburg, Mass., 2.  
 Flagg, Melzer, 96.  
 Flagg, William, 95.  
 Flora of Somerville, The, 4-13.  
 Fort Jackson, La., 25, 49, 50, 51.  
 Fort Macomb, 50, 55, 57.  
 Fort Macon, 32.  
 Fort Monroe, 27.  
 Fort Pike, 50.  
 Fort St. Philip, 49, 50, 53.  
 Fosdick, James, 15, 21.  
 Fosket, Abigail, 85.  
 Fosket, Jonathan, 85.  
 Fosket, Meriam (Miriam), 82, 85, 87, 88.  
 Fosket, Thomas, 85.  
 Powle, Anna (Carter), 89.  
 Powle, John, 20, 89.  
 Foxcroft, Francis, 78.  
 Francis, Nathaniel, 21.  
 Francis, Nicholas, 14.  
 Franklin Street, Somerville, 71.  
 French Revolution, 42.  
 Frost, Joseph, 85, 87, 89.  
 Frost, Dr. Samuel, 89.  
 Frothingham, Captain Benjamin, 41.  
 Frothingham, James K., 74, 90, 91, 92, 94, 96.  
 Frothingham, Joseph, 82, 85.  
 Frothingham, Miss Mary, 91.  
 Frothingham, Nathaniel, 82, 85.  
 Frothingham, Captain Richard, 47.  
 Frying-pan Shoals, 31, 35.  
 Fuller, Mr., 67, 68.  
 Gage, General, 86.  
 Galley, Augustus (ship), 87.



Gardner, Edward, 17, 18, 20, 22.  
 Gardner, Henry, 18, 20.  
 Gardner, James, 18, 20.  
 Gardner, John, 20.  
 Gardner, Rev. John, 20.  
 Gardner, Lucy, 20.  
 Gardner, Richard, 20.  
 Gardner Row School, 14, 16, 17, 22, 91.  
 Gardner, Samuel, 18, 19, 20, 21, 90, 94, 95, 99.  
 Gates, Isaac, 71, 72, 91.  
 George, 23.  
 Gibbs, Jonathan, 95.  
 Giles, Joseph B., 47.  
 Gilman's Field, 11.  
 Glisson, Captain, 33.  
 "Gloria Patri," 3.  
 Gloucester, Eng., 77.  
 Gloucester, Mass., 1.  
 Goodwin, Captain, 40.  
 Goodwin, Deacon David, 63, 66.  
 Goodwin, John, 89.  
 Gordon, Captain George A., 77.  
 Gordon, Robert, 68, 71, 72, 92, 93, 97, 99.  
 Gordon, Yorick S., 71, 73.  
 Gorham, Mary, 39.  
 Gorham, Nathaniel, 21, 42, 63, 65.  
 Gorham, Nathaniel, Jr., 63, 66.  
 Gorham, Hon. Nathaniel, 21, 65.  
 Gragg, Mr., 93, 95.  
 Graves, Thomas, 4.  
 Gray, P. T., 70.  
 Greaves, Doct., 83.  
 Greaves, Katherine, 84.  
 Greaves, Margaret, 84.  
 Greaves, Phoebe, 84.  
 Greaves, Dr. Thomas, 81, 85.  
 Greene, 79.  
 Green, General, 6.  
 Green, James, 63.  
 Green Mountain Institute, 1.  
 Green, Nathaniel, 68, 69.  
 Grubb, William, 41.  
 Halifax, 86.  
 Hall, Moses, 68.  
 Hall, Richard, 89.  
 Hall, Stephen, 85, 86.  
 Hampton, 87.  
 Hancock, Governor, 15.  
 Hancock, Captain John, 15, 21.  
 Hancock, Rev. John, 15.  
 Harlow, Thomas S., 1.  
 Harris, Charlotte, 65.  
 Harris, Thomas, 39, 44, 66.  
 Harris, Captain Thomas, 49, 63.  
 Hartford, The, 51.  
 Harvard College, 20, 23, 38, 39, 79, 92.  
 Harvard Law School, 1, 23.  
 Hawes, Frank Mortimer, 14, 38, 63, 90.  
 Hawes, Levi Lindley, 25, 49.  
 Hawes, Sergeant, 35.  
 Hawkins, Christopher, 64.  
 Hawkins, Collector, 18, 19.  
 Hawkins, Nathaniel, 20, 42, 63, 64.  
 Hawkins, Samuel, 64.  
 Hawkins, Sarah, 64.  
 Hay, John, 21.  
 Haywood, I., 73, 74.  
 Henchman, Nathaniel H., 90.  
 Henderson, Frank, 8.  
 Hertzog's Religious Cyclopaedia, 2.  
 Hesseltine, Major, 27.  
 Higginson, Colonel T. W., 12.  
 Higginson, Rev. Mr., 4, 5.  
 High School, Somerville, 10.  
 Hill, Abraham, 84.  
 Hill, Elizabeth, 84.  
 Hill, Ivis, 47.  
 Hill, Martha, 84.  
 Hill, Solomon, 84.  
 Hilton Head, 34, 36.  
 Hitchings, Mrs. Augustus, 47.  
 Hobbs, Miss, 97, 100.  
 Hobgobin Hall, 23.  
 Holbrook, Abiah, 38.  
 Holbrook, Abiah, Jr., 38.  
 Holbrook, Mary Needham, 38.  
 Holbrook, Samuel, 38.  
 Holden, Oliver, 44.  
 Holland, Silas H., 12.  
 Hooper, Thomas, 90, 99, 100.  
 Hopkinton, Mass., 86.  
 Hoppin, Rev. Dr., 85.  
 Hoppin, William, 82, 85.  
 Hopping, Nicholas, 41.  
 Howe, Lord, 86.  
 Hurd, Benjamin, 65.  
 Hurd, Benjamin, Jr., 20, 46, 63.  
 Hurd, Joseph, 42, 63, 65, 66.  
 Hurd, Josiah S., 90.  
 Hutchinson, Samuel, 82, 85.  
 Independent Christian Church, 1.  
 India, 81.  
 Ireland, Johnny, 47.  
 Ireland, Martha, 70, 71, 72.  
 Jackson, Mrs. Eleanor, 70.  
 Jackson, Rev. Henry, 90.  
 Jaques, Henry, 90.  
 Jaquith, Oliver, 67, 68.  
 Jefferds, Miss, 93, 95, 96.  
 Johnson, Captain, 83.  
 Johnson, Elizabeth (Jeffs), 86.  
 Johnson, Jeffs, 85, 86.  
 Johnson, Miss Sebrina, 93.  
 Johnson, Zechariah, 86.  
 Jones, Ruth, 19.  
 Kelley, Hall J., 90.  
 Kemey, James, 41.  
 Kent, Samuel, 16, 21, 63, 64.  
 Kettell, 79.  
 Kettell, John, 63, 66.  
 Kettell, Mary, 82.  
 Kettell, Sarah, 86.  
 Kilby Street, Boston, 86.  
 Kingfisher (frigate), 80.  
 King Philip, 84, 87.  
 King Street, Boston, 86.  
 Ladd, 27.  
 Lamson, John, 16.  
 Lamson, Joseph, 15, 16, 21.  
 Larkin, John, 40.  
 "Latest Word of Universalism, The," 2.  
 Leaky, Matthew, 85, 88.  
 Lee, General Charles, 23.  
 Lemmon, Joseph, 80, 85, 88.  
 Lemmon, Mary Bradley, 88.  
 Leonard, H. F., 100.  
 Lexington, Mass., 20.  
 Lincoln Field, 7.  
 Lombard University, 2.



London, Eng., 5.  
 Long Wharf, 27.  
 Louisiana Native Guards, 55.  
 Lowell, James Russell, 13.  
 Lowell Railroad, 11, 12.  
 Lutwich, Edward, 85.  
 Lutwyche, Edward, 86.  
 Lutwyche, Edward Goldstone, 86.  
 Lynde, Hon. Joseph, 87.  
 Lynde, Sarah (Davidson), 87.  
 Lynn, Mass., 20, 77.

Macarty, Margaret, 85.  
 Maccurdy, Thomas, 86.  
 Mackerel Lane, Boston, 86.  
 Main Street, Charlestown, 78, 84, 87.  
 Malden, Mass., 84, 87, 88, 89.  
 Mallet, Isaac, 16, 21, 39.  
 Mallet, John, 85.  
 Mary (ship), 88.  
 Massachusetts Bank, 39.  
 Massachusetts Bay Colony, 4.  
 Massachusetts Law and Order League, 2.  
 Matanzas, S. S., 36.  
 Mather, Increase, 80.  
 Maudsley (Moseley), 87.  
 Maulsby, David L., 1.  
 McCarty, James, 86.  
 McCarty, John, 86.  
 Mead, Elijah, 63.  
 Medford, Mass., 4, 41, 80, 81, 82.  
 Medford Daughters of the Revolution, 23.  
 Medford Street, 47.  
 Memorial History of Boston, 38.  
 Menotomy River, 80.  
 Menotomy, 14, 18.  
 Merrimac River, 86.  
 Middleborough, Mass., 1.  
 Middlesex County, 77.  
 Milk Row, 42, 43, 68, 70, 72, 74, 97, 98, 100.  
 Milk Row District, 16, 64.  
 Milk Row School, 14, 15, 22, 67, 71, 91, 93, 94, 96, 98, 99, 100.  
 Miller, Captain Joseph, 64, 67, 69, 70, 71, 72.  
 Miller, Richard, 41.  
 Miller's River, 4, 77.  
 Mill Pond, 78.  
 Mill Street, 78.  
 Mira, 23.  
 Mishawum, 4.  
 Mississippi, S. S., 27, 33, 36.  
 Mobile, 53, 59, 61.  
 Mobile Bay, 57, 58.  
 Moody, Josiah, 96.  
 Moody, Samuel, 95, 96.  
 Morse, Rev. Jedediah, D. D., 44, 63, 66.  
 Morse, Samuel, F. B., 66.  
 Morse's School Geography and Atlas, 101.  
 Moses, 44.  
 Mount Vernon (gunboat), 33.  
 Mt. Benedict, 78.  
 Munroe, Henry, 8.  
 Munroe, Nancy T., 8.  
 Murray's English Grammar and Exercises, 101.  
 Murray's English Reader, 71, 101.  
 Murray's Introduction to His English Reader, 101.

Mussey, Miss Letitia Howard, 1.  
 Mystic Avenue, 8.  
 Mystic Ponds, 14, 65.  
 Mystic River, 4, 11, 74, 77.  
 Mystic Valley Club, 2.

Nancy, 23.  
 Neighborhood Sketch Number 8, 47.  
 Newburyport, Mass., 88.  
 Newcastle-on-Tyne, 87.  
 New England Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools, 2.  
 New England Commission on Admissions Examinations, 2.  
 New England Genealogical Register, 38.  
 New England Historic-Genealogical Society, 2.  
 New Ipswich Academy, 70.  
 New Orleans, La., 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57, 58, 62.  
 New Pearl Street, 11.  
 New London, Conn., 1.  
 New York, 27, 36, 86.  
 New Zealand, 81.  
 Normal School, Salem, 2.  
 Northampton, 77.  
 North Street, Somerville, 18.  
 Nova Scotia, 86.

Oak Street, Somerville, 7, 8.  
 "Occasional Addresses," 3.  
 Orne, Sarah, 86.

Paige, 14, 18.  
 Paine, Colonel, 53.  
 Paffrey's Swamp, 11.  
 Parker, Daniel, 63.  
 Parker, Leonard M., 90.  
 Parker, Mr., 93, 94, 95, 98, 99, 100.  
 Parker, Thomas, 38.  
 Parmiter, Thankful, 88.  
 Paso Chef Menteur, 50.  
 Payson, Samuel, 38, 45, 63, 90, 91.  
 Perkins, Abraham, 87.  
 Perkins, Doct., 85.  
 Perry, Albion A., 2.  
 Personal Experience of a Union Veteran, 25-37, 49-62.  
 Phi Beta Kappa, 2.  
 Phillips, Ann (Foster), 88.  
 Phillips, Captain Eleazar, 88.  
 Phillips, Elizabeth, 88.  
 Phillips, Henry, 79, 87.  
 Phillips, Joanna, 85, 87.  
 Phillips, Colonel John, 87.  
 Phillips, Katharine (Anderson), 87.  
 Phillips, Mary, 79.  
 Phillips, Mary (Dwight), 79.  
 "Philosophy of Universalism, The," 2.  
 Phis, Solomon, 83.  
 Phinney, Elijah, 90, 91.  
 Phipps, Adigail, 82, 83, 84.  
 Phipps, Betty, 83, 84.  
 Phipps, Elijah, 82, 83.  
 Phipps, Frances, 15, 88.  
 Phipps, Joseph, 14, 21, 63, 64, 82, 83, 88, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100.  
 Phipps, Sam'l., 83.  
 Phipps, Samuel, 77-89.  
 Phipps, Solomon, 14, 78, 79, 82, 84.  
 Phipps, William S., 90.  
 Pierce, 79, 87.



Pierce Academy, 1.  
 Pierce, Jacob, 68, 70.  
 Pierce, Jerathmeel, 85, 87.  
 Pike, Major, 57.  
 Pike, Mr., 45.  
 Pine Street, Somerville, 7.  
 Plains of Moab, 44.  
 Plymouth Plantation, 77.  
 Polly's Swamp, 7, 11.  
 Ponchartrain, Lake, 50.  
 Pool, Lot, 90.  
 Porter, — 49.  
 Port Hudson, 53, 54.  
 Port Royal (Hilton Head), 34.  
 Pound Lot, 99.  
 Powder House, 7, 16, 98.  
 Powers, Thomas, 85, 87.  
 Prentiss, L., 73, 92.  
 Prospect Hill, 6, 7, 8, 15.  
 Prospect Hill Schoolhouse, 47.  
 Prospect Street, Somerville, 7, 47.  
 Providence, R. I., 1.  
 Putnam, Aaron, 42, 63, 66.  
 Putnam, Aaron, Esq., 40, 42, 65.  
 Putnam, Henry, 15, 21.  
 Putnam, Israel, 15.

Radnor, Wales, 86.  
 Rand, Hannah, 85.  
 Rand, John, 84.  
 Rand, Jonathan, 84.  
 Rand, Mary, 39, 82.  
 Rand, Mr., 83.  
 Rand's Woods, 7, 12.  
 Raymond, Daniel, 45.  
 Rea, Mrs., 91, 93, 95, 96.  
 Red River, 55.  
 Reed, Daniel, 17.  
 Reed, Captain Daniel, 63, 64, 66, 69, 71, 72.  
 Reed, Mary (Converse), 17.  
 Remington, Miss Charlotte, 91.  
 Remington, Miss Julia, 91.  
 Republican National Convention, 2.  
 Revolution, The, 23.  
 Reynolds, Joseph, 96, 97.  
 Richards Tavern, 99.  
 Ricker, Benjamin F., 47.  
 Rigolets, The, 50.  
 "Rinaldo, H. B. M. S. S." 51.  
 Robinson's American Arithmetic, 101.  
 Robinson's Elements, 101.  
 Rockwood, Mr., 45.  
 Royall, 79.  
 Royall House, The Old Medford, 23.  
 Royall, Isaac, 23.  
 Royall, Colonel Isaac, Jr., 23.  
 Rush, Margaret, 85.  
 Russell, Daniel, 72, 91, 92.  
 Russell, James, 39, 84, 90, 99.  
 Russell, Hon. James, 40.  
 Russell, Joseph, 17, 18, 20.  
 Russell, Levi, 20.  
 Russell, Mary (Robbins), 17.  
 Russell, Philemon, 16, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 40.  
 Russell, Philemon R., 20, 64, 70, 90, 94, 96.  
 Russell, Phoebe, 19.  
 Russell, Walter, 16, 17, 20, 21.  
 Rust, Lieutenant-Colonel, 27.  
 Rutherford Avenue, Charlestown, 78.  
 Rutland, Mass., 88.

Salem, Mass., 4.  
 Salem Street, Charlestown, 100.  
 Salem Turnpike, 106.  
 Samborn, David, 47.  
 Sergeant, Henry, 65.  
 Savanna River, 34.  
 Sawyer, Edward, 92, 93, 95, 96.  
 School Holidays, 92, 101.  
 School Street, 47.  
 Sabrook Landing, 34.  
 Second Church, Malden, 88.  
 Second Ohio Light Battery, 59.  
 Sewall, Mr., 45.  
 Sewall, Samuel, 79.  
 Sherburn, Mass., 89.  
 Sherman, General T. W., 58, 59.  
 Ship Island, 28, 30, 37, 49, 50, 55, 56, 57, 59, 62.  
 Simmons, Sergeant, 31.  
 Simonds, Silas, 39.  
 Skotto, Mr., 83.  
 Smith, Jesse, 70, 71, 72.  
 Smith, John, 85, 87.  
 Soley, Dorcas, 85, 87.  
 Soley, Dorcas (Coffin), 87.  
 Soley, John, 87, 90, 96.  
 Somerville Avenue, 47.  
 Somerville Historical Society, 2.  
 Somerville Historical Society, Officers of, 24, 48, 76, 102.  
 South America, 31.  
 South Kingston, R. I., 64.  
 South Writing School, 38.  
 Speed, Adjutant, 50.  
 Sprague, Ann D., 93, 95, 96, 97, 99.  
 Sprague, Elizabeth (Stover), 88.  
 Sprague, John, 85, 87, 88.  
 Sprague, Jonathan, 87.  
 Sprague, Mary (Bunker), 87.  
 Springfield Street, 8.  
 Spring Hill, 7.  
 Staffordshire, Eng., 80, 81.  
 State Board of Education, 2.  
 State Street, Boston, 86.  
 St. Charles Street, 54.  
 Stephen, 23.  
 Stetson, David, 64, 90.  
 Stevens, Ephraim, 95.  
 Stickney, Mr., 67, 68.  
 Simpson, Abigail (Sweetser), 87.  
 Simpson, Andrew, 87.  
 Simpson, Joseph, 85, 87.  
 Stowham, Mass., 15, 39, 41.  
 Storer, John, 63, 66.  
 St. Paul, Minn., 1.  
 Storer, Mr., 83.  
 Stoughton, Mass., 1.  
 Stow, Mass., 20.  
 Stovers, Nicholas, 5.  
 Stuchin, S. A., 85.  
 Sunex, Eng., 81.  
 Swan, John, 19.  
 Swan, Samuel, 17, 19, 20.  
 Swan, Samuel, Esq., 41.  
 Swaney, Sentinel, 52.  
 Sweetser, Joseph, 83.  
 Sweetser, Samuel, 88.  
 Sycamore Street, Somerville, 12.  
 Teel, Jonathan, 63, 66.  
 Tee, Samuel P., 90, 96.



Ten Hills Farm, 8, 11, 23, 80.  
 Tenney, Robert G., 90.  
 Texas, 53.  
 Theta Delta Chi Fraternity, 2.  
 Thirteenth Maine Regiment, 27, 37.  
 Thirty-first Massachusetts Regiment, 27, 32, 36.  
 Thompson, 95.  
 Thompson, Dr. Abram R., 64, 66, 67, 70, 71, 72, 90.  
 Thornton, Dr. Matthew, 86.  
 Thompson, Mrs., 93, 95, 96.  
 Thompson Square, 84.  
 Thompson, Thomas, 97.  
 Thompson, Timothy, 63, 64.  
 Thompson, Timothy, Jr., 40.  
 Three Pole Lane, 74.  
 Tillotson, Mr., 45.  
 Town Hill, 100.  
 Tremont Street, Boston, 27.  
 Trumbal, Sam'l, 85.  
 Trumbull, John, 88.  
 Trumbull, Mary (Jones), 88.  
 Trumbull, Richard, 41.  
 Trumbull, Samuel, 88.  
 Trumbull, Timothy, 15, 88.  
 Tufts, Miss Abigail, 93.  
 Tufts College, 1, 2.  
 Tufts, Edmund, 93.  
 Tufts, Isaac, 64, 72, 73, 74, 90, 91, 92, 96.  
 Tufts, Joel, 73, 90, 91, 92, 94.  
 Tufts, John, 98, 99.  
 Tufts, Nathan, 2nd., 90, 96, 97, 99.  
 Tufts, Oliver, House, 23.  
 Tufts, P., 72.  
 Tufts, Peter, Jr., 21, 63, 66, 90.  
 Tufts, Samuel, 21, 43, 63, 64.  
 Tufts, Dr. Simon, 85.  
 Tufts, Timothy, 21, 22, 63.  
 Tufts, Timothy, Esq., 64.  
 Turner, Rev. Edward, 90, 91, 94, 95, 97, 98, 99.  
 Turner, Rev. Mr., 69.  
 Twentieth Century Club, 2.  
 Tyler, Jonas, 61.  
 Underwood, J., 72.  
 Underwood, James, 47.  
 Union, Me., 26.  
 Union Square, Somerville, 4, 64.  
 Union Street, 100.  
 United States, 31.  
 "Universalism," 2.  
 Universalist General Convention, 2.  
 University Club, 2.  
 Ursuline Convent, 78.  
 "Veruna," gunboat, 53.  
 Vinal, Louise A., 4.  
 Vose, Elijah, Jr., 95.  
 Waite, Samuel, 84, 88.  
 Walker, Cornelius, 97.  
 Walker's Dictionary (abridged), 101.  
 Walker, Rev. James, 39, 90, 95, 100.  
 Walker, Timothy, 63.  
 Walker, Timothy, Hon., 66.  
 Walnut Hill, 6, 7.  
 Walnut Street, Somerville, 8, 10.  
 Wapping Street, Charlestown, 100.  
 Warren, Amos, 18, 21, 22.  
 Warren Street, Charlestown, 84.  
 Warwick, Eng., 77.  
 Washington, D. C., 58.  
 Washington, George, 43, 44.  
 Washington Street, 7, 47, 81.  
 Wayne, Miss Eliza, 100.  
 Webb, Elizabeth, 83.  
 Webb, Grace, 38.  
 West Cambridge, 14.  
 Weston, Mass., 86.  
 West Somerville, 12.  
 Whipple, Benjamin, 90.  
 Whitney, 27.  
 Whitney Mr., 93.  
 Whittemore, Anna, 87.  
 Whittemore, Jabez, 15.  
 Whittemore, John, 87, 89.  
 Whittemore, Joseph, Jr., 82.  
 Whittemore, Captain Samuel, 18.  
 Whittemore, Sarah (Hall), 87.  
 Whittenore, William, 19, 22.  
 Whittier, John Greenleaf, 11.  
 Whittredge, Mrs., 47.  
 Wigglesworth, Rev. Michael, 88.  
 Wilkins, J. M., 92.  
 Wilkins, J. M. K., 72, 73.  
 Willis Creek, 4.  
 Willis, Grace, 86.  
 Willoughby, 6.  
 Wilson, Jeremy, 99.  
 Wilson, Sergeant-Major, 50.  
 Wilson, Captain William, 87.  
 Wiltsire, Eng., 77, 78, 81.  
 Winter Hill, 6, 7, 18, 70, 72, 74, 85, 91, 96, 99.  
 Winter Hill Road, 6, 98, 99, 100.  
 Winthrop, Governor, 23.  
 Winthrop, Mr., 80.  
 Woburn, 14, 20, 81.  
 Wood, David, 21.  
 Wood, Hepzibah (Billings), 88.  
 Wood, John, 88.  
 Wood, Deacon John, 88.  
 Wood, Joseph, 88.  
 Wood, Mary (Blaney), 88.  
 Woodstock, Vt., 1.  
 Worcester, Eng., 77.  
 Worcester County, Mass., 85.  
 Wright, Timothy, 41.  
 Wyman, 14, 28, 64, 65.  
 Wyman, Charles, 92, 94.  
 Wyman, Elizabeth, 20.  
 Wyman, Hezekiah, 65.  
 Wyman, Luke, 90.  
 Wyman, Nehemiah, 67.  
 Wyman, Captain Nehemiah, 63, 64, 70, 72, 90.  
 Wyman Seth, 19, 20, 22, 40, 42, 63, 64, 66.  
 Wyman, Miss Susan, 91.  
 Yale, 66.  
 Yorkshire, Eng., 81.  
 Young, Thomas, 8.



# Officers of Somerville Historical Society

1905-1906

President . . . . .	Frank M. Hawes
First Vice-President . . . . .	Levi L. Hawes
Second Vice-President . . . . .	James F. Whitney
Third Vice-President . . . . .	John F. Ayer
Treasurer . . . . .	Seth Mason
Recording Secretary . . . . .	Mrs. William B. Holmes
Corresponding Secretary . . . . .	Florence E. Carr
Librarian and Curator . . . . .	Alfred M. Cutler

## Council-at-Large

Charles D. Elliot	Anna P. Vinal	L. Roger Wentworth
-------------------	---------------	--------------------

## Committee on Historic Sites

J. O. Hayden, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot	Edward Glines
------------------------	-------------------	---------------

## Essays and Addresses

John F. Ayer, Chairman	Charles D. Elliot
W. E. Brigham	Seth Mason

Mrs. J. F. Ayer

## Library and Cabinet

Alfred M. Cutler, Chairman	Edith Hayes	Mrs. Helen Heald
----------------------------	-------------	------------------

## Photographs

Benjamin F. Freeman, Chairman	James F. Whitney
	Albert L. Haskell

## Press and Clippings

W. P. Jones, Chairman	Anna P. Vinal
Mrs. Emma Prichard Hadley	Lucy M. Stone

## Committee on Publications

Sam Walter Foss, Chairman	Frank M. Hawes
Sara A. Stone	Samuel Earle

## Military Records

J. H. Dusseault, Chairman	Alfred M. Cutler	Mary A. Haley
---------------------------	------------------	---------------

## House

Mrs. Isaac Rich, Chairman	Mrs. F. DeWitt Lapham	Mrs. E. F. Hammond
---------------------------	-----------------------	--------------------

## Hospitality

Mrs. William B. Holmes, Chairman	Mrs. L. B. Pillsbury
	Mrs. Mae D. Frazar

6147 X











